The profitable Art of Gardening, now the third time *set forth: to which is added muche* necessarie matter, and a number of secretes, vvith the Phisicke helps belonging to eathe Hearbe, and that easily prepared.

To this is annexed tvvo proper treatises, the one entituled, The maruellous gouernement, propertie, and benefite of the Bees, with the rare secretes of the honie and waxe.

And the other: the yearely coniectures meete for Husbandmen to know: Englished by THOMAS HYLL Londoner.

Wherevnto is newly added a treatise of the Art of graffing and planting of trees.

Imprinted at London, by Henry Bynneman.
ANNO. 1579.

The Authors out of which this worke of Gardening is gathered.

Sotion a Greeke writer.
Florentinus a Greeke writer.
C. Plinius.
M. Cato.
Iunius Columella.
M. Varro.
Palladius Rutilius.
Aristomacus.
Theophrastus.
Aristotle.
Didimus.
Dioscorides.
Democritus.
Galenus.
Paule Aegineta.
Petrus Andr.
Mathiolus.
Constan. Cæsar.
Hieronimus Cardanus.
And sundrie others.

To the right worshipfull Sir Henrie Seamer knight, Thomas Hill vvisheth all health and felicitie.

WHen, I had ended theſe trauelles and laboures of myne (righte VVorſhipfull Sir) I called to remembrance the tvvo notable ſayings of the vvell learned and vvorthye Philoſopher Xenophon, vvho dyd not only confeſſe, but rather vvith other vviſe men dyd agree, that that arte vvas moſte commendable, and of all men moſt vvorthie to be allovved, and accepted, vvhich to a common vvealth brought anye kynde of profite and commoditie.

And bycauſe thys Arte of Gardening is of it ſelfe very profitable, and bringeth moſt neceſſarie commodities, both to Cities and Tovvnes, therefore in my ſimple iudgement, it deſerueth no ſmall commendation.

The beginning of it is very auncient (ſo that of no nevv inuention) but long ago found out, and firſte by dame Nature, and after continued and augmented by the diligente care, and vigilante paynes of the vviſe and skilfull Gardeners, by vvhoſe induſtrie and meanes, it is novve grovvne to ſuche perfection, as I thinke it therefore moſt vvorthy to be accompted amongſt other ſuche good artes, as euery common vvealth hath neede of. And although it may appeare ſomevvhat inferioure to other artes, yet notvvithſtanding, the ſame is as profitable, and altogyther as neceſſarie as the others are, forſomuche as this is ſo linked, and chayned to the noble Artes, both of Phiſicke and Surgerie, as by no meanes poſsible, it may bee ſeparated from the other, but rather as a dayly handmayden, continually ſerueth them both, the vvhiche tvvo (at this day)

are had in no ſmall reputation and renovvne, and that not vvithout good cauſe, for ſo much as no common vvealth can be vvithout them. And bicauſe theſe tvvo can not vvell be performed vvithout this third, therefore men haue continually ſought to bring it to perfection. And firſt the ancient Husbandmen tooke great paines therein, after them the learned Philoſophers, and other vviſe men, vvhiche from time to time haue obſerued and noted ſuch notable leſſons and inſtructions, as (at this day) are common among men in all countreys. This arte being once knovvne, and the vſe ſo neceſſarie eſteemed, hath cauſed vviſe men by a kinde of cõmon conſent, to place Gardẽs neare vnto cities, tovvnes, villages, as a ſtore houſe and place, vvherein might be kepte as vvel al ſuch herbes, as are fit for the health and preſeruation of mans body, as alſo all maner of pleaſant floures, and delectable herbs as are daily ſought for, and required of the common people. And this arte novv, vvhat vvith long experience, and long continuance of painefull men, in trying and ſearching the cõdition and nature of euery groũd, and their aptneſſe in bearing ſuche ſeede as ſhoulde be ſovven therin, is growen to ſuch a perfection, that now euery good Gardener can tell vvhat groũd is fit for ſuch & ſuch ſeedes, how it ought to be digged, dunged, & caſt orderly into beds, and after the ſedes ſovven, hovv they ought to be vvatered, and vveeded, that therby the plants in cõming vp might the better proſper and come forvvard. Beſides theſe neceſſarie poyntes, in ordering the ground, in chooſing ſeedes apt for euery ſoyle, and in obſeruing the time fit for ſovving, they haue left behind them certaine meanes and vvayes to auoyd and driue avvay al ſuch beaſts, vvormes, flies, vvith the like as commonly annoy and hurt the vvorkemanſhip of Gardeners, yea ſuch cũning vvit and vviſdome is conteyned in this arte of gardening, that the vviſe and mighty Emperour Dioclesian,

Diocleſian, through the delight and pleaſure he toke therin (as vvriteth Aelius Spartianus) after he had reigned. xviij. yeares, left for a ſeaſon the vvhole gouernement & rule of the Empire, and forſaking the Court, vvente into a meane houſe, hauing a garden adioyning thereto, vvhere he vvith his proper hands, both ſovved, ſet, and vveeded the hearbes of his Garden, vvhich kind of life ſo pleaſed him, that hardly he vvas intreated to take vpō him again the gouernemēt of the Empire, ſo much did this quiet life and beautie of the garden pleaſe him. This example may moue all other meaner men to haue the like felicitie and pleaſure in gardening, ſeeing ſo noble an Emperoure choſe rather to forſake hys regall authoritie & povver, and ſtill to continue in that ſtate of quiet life, affirming it a far better & happier eſtate to liue quietly amōg the faire & pleaſant floures of the gardē, than to rule, & be daily called on and troubled, vvith the ſerious & vvaighty affayres of the Empire. But heere I vvill ſtay my pen, leaſt I ſeeme ouer tedious vnto youre vvorſhip in ſo ſmall a treatiſe, deſiring your goodneſſe to pardon my bold attempt, and rather to behold the earneſt zeale and affection of my vvilling mind born tovvardes you, thā to cōſider the ſimpleneſſe of the ſtile, and vvante of eloquence. I ſhould haue bin aſhamed (right vvorſhipful ſir) to haue vēture ſo farre, as to dedicate this my thirde increaſe vnto your goodneſſe, vvere it not that the argumēt of the matter is both profitable & pleaſant to be read, vvherin is taught a number of vvorthy ſecretes, in the ſovving and ſetting of the moſt plants, vvith the great commodities they ſerue for, in the vſe of Phiſicke: And vvere it not againe, that I fully perſuade my ſelfe, that youre vvorſhip vvill rather accepte the mind of the vvryter, than the maner of vvriting. Thus praying almightie God, to ſend your vvorſhip long health, and the yeares of the vvorthy Neſtor.

Yours moſt humble Thomas Hyll.

The Preface to the reader and diligent trauayler in the Arte of Gardening.

IT ſemeth (louing Reader) not without reaſon, which *M. Terentius Varro* writeth, that the auncient Philoſophers named the earth, the mother of al plants and creſcent things: and the like beſtowed about the doing and dreſsing of it, to be an exerciſe both vertuous and profitable. VVhiche the auncient Romanes, and diligent Husbandmen did well obſerue, in that they from time to time did ſo paynefully labour, and with as greate care ſought buſily out the vnderſtanding and knowledge, not onely of euery kinde of earth, but how to digge, dung, orderly dreſſe, and caſt into ſquare and euen beds euery ground: and after the ſame (they diligētly) learned the apt times which were moſt conuenient to ſowe or plante in, according to the increaſe and decreaſe of the Moone, with the aſpects of the Moone vnto ſuch Planets, as moſt aptly ſerue vnto the ſame. VVhen the ſedes were thus orderly ſowen and ſomewhat come vp, then they throughly learned that the often weeding and watering of the yong plants, did cauſe them the faſter to come vp. And in ſuch places where the plantes grew thicke togither, they by their painefull induſtrie learned to ſette them thinner, to the end they might the better increaſe and waxe bigger. And beſides theſe, they carefully laboured, and diligently ſought out al ſuch meanes, that might happely expell and deſtroy the moſt kind of venemous and harmefull beaſtes, wormes, flyes, and ſuch like, that cōmonly annoy and eat vp the ſeedes and yong plantes comming vp. And as their diligence, great cares, and painefull trauayles beſtowed in the arte of Gardening, deſerued of all men worthy commendation, ſo I vpō this occaſion, thinke it not much digreſsing frō the purpoſe, to ſet forth this treatiſe of mine, now the third time increaſed, to whiche I haue added ſuch profitable and pleaſant matter, as I found written either in the Italian or Latine tongue, that intreated of this arte, whoſe names of the moſt of them do after appeare, digeſted into the forme of a Table. And beſides theſe, I haue adioyned ſundry pleaſant ſecretes, and the neceſſarie commodities alſo, which moſt of the herbes ſerue vnto in the vſe of Phiſicke, which now I haue performed in ſuch ſort, as the like hitherto hath not bin publiſhed in the Engliſh tongue, and for recompēce of my induſtrie, I craue no other of thee (gētle reader) but his friendly reporting

porting of this Treatiſe: the ſame if I may vnderſtande, ſhall encourage me ſhortly to publiſh the other profitable part belonging aptly to this, whiche onely teacheth the perfit order of planting and graffing of the moſt trees now in vſe with vs, with the proper ſecrets taught in the doing and ordering of them, matter right profitable to be vnderſtanded. But in the meane time, loke for a proper treatiſe ioined to this of Gardening which hath to name the husbandmás cõiectures, vttering therin the right profitable notes, not only of the cõdition of the yeare, but other husbandly inſtructiõs, ſeruing neceſſarily to the vſe and defence of the cattell, with the ſpeciall gouernment to be followed in each moneth throughout the yeare, for the preſeruation of health, and diuers other inſtructions right profitable to be vnderſtanded: vnto which beſides, is annexed a right pleaſant Treatiſe, and that profitable, of the maruellous gouernment, order, and vſage of the Bees, with the greate commodity by hauing them in a Garden, both of their hony and waxe, and after their hony and waxe ſo had, to what vſe they may be applied, as well in phiſicke for the health of body, as alſo in Surgerie, and this eſpecially, after the diſtilling of eyther of them, whiche rare ſecrets ſhall more at large appeare by the perʋſing of the treatiſe. And thys haue I rather ioyned to my Booke of Gardening, for that the honey Bees (after the mind of the auncient Gardeners) be ſo apte a furniture, and that profitable in a Garden. Alſo looke for a treatiſe of mine, being in a readineſſe with the Printer, and intituled, certayne pleaſant probleames with other apt anſwers, teaching fruitefull leſſons for the preſeruation of health, with other philoſophicall demaũds, and their learned anſwers, vttering ſuch vnknowne matter, as hitherto hath not bin publiſhed in the Engliſh tongue, gathered firſte by a learned Cardinall and Philoſopher named *Ferdinandus Ponzettus*, out of the Arabians, Greekes, and auncient Phiſitions in the Latin tongue, and now engliſhed by me for the cõmoditie of many. Alſo ſundry other treatiſes be in a like readyneſſe, with other of the Printers, whoſe names and titles I haue heere omitted or rather ouerpaſſed for tediouſneſſe to the Reader. Thus leauing (gentle Reader) to trouble you further, I commit you to God, wiſhing only your gentle fauour to further theſe my rude attempts.

Et feliciter vale.

A friend to the Reader.

BY tract of time things most obscure are manifested playne:
In time the drie and hardned flint, is pearst with droppes of rayne.
By time we ioy, time leades our life, by time we do possesse:
In time we haue that we desire, each thing both more and lesse.
Sith time of right deserues to haue, more prayse than tongue can tell:
In time let Hyll *receyue reward, that hath begon so well.*
Experience plast in wit profound, in time hath made to yeelde
To him that whilom captiue was, a conquest of the fielde.
VVith paynefull penne the wrighter, hath expreſt in Engliſh playne,
The needefull ayde and mightie force, that doth in hearbes remayne.
The time to plant, the time to set, the time to rayse agayne,
This man by treble diligence, hath brought to light with payne.
Of things that were so high of price, this authour by his skill,
Hath brought such plentie, that each wight may haue thereof his fill.
For which this Authour askes no good, nor gaine of glistering glee:
He couets no vayneglorious prayse, as you may easly see.
His quaking quill hath forced more, a good report to haue,
A light reward, a small returne, this Authour seemes to craue.
VVherefore yong man or aged Syre, else whosoeuer thou be:
That by misuenture or by will, shall chaunce this Booke to see,
Let cankred enuie meete for hell, abandon euery sense:
And rather graunt to saue than spill, to help than worke offence.
Yeeld thou due prayse to him that meant thee nothing to offend,
So shalt thou see and well perceyue, whereto this worke doth tend.
So shalt thou know the good from yll, the right from wrong discerne:
So shall thy verdict framed, force, the writer more to learne.

FINIS.

teacheth the skilful ordering and care to be bestowed on Gardens, with necessarie helpes, defenses, and Secretes.

¶ What three poyntes are to bee learned of euerye Gardner minding to haue a fruiteful Garden: the health that may bee recouered by walking in the same: and the commoditie of Gardens placed neare to the Citie. Cap. j.

Eing a fruitefull and pleasaunt Garden can not be had without ỹ good skyl and diligent minde of the Gardner (or master of the ground) neyther can any profite aryse by Gardening, without coste and charges therein bestowed; neyther perfitelye can it be attayned vnto without Art, instructing the due seasons of the yeare. It is therefore mete, that these things be first cared for, prouided and known, which being done, the Gartner is made perfect, delectable, and profitable: and we then receiue by it two special commodities: The first is, profit, which riseth through ỹ encrease of hearbes and floures: the other is, pleasure, very delectable through the delight of walkyng in the same, whiche both giueth health to mans body, and recouerie of strength after long sickenesse, by commoditie of taking the freshe ayre and swete smell of the floures in the same. And of these two Varro & Palladius wyll, ỹ Gardens be placed neare to the Citie, both for the cõmoditie of those herbes & rotes serving to Phisicke, as al other herbes and flours, which be profitable for the Citie: Seing that Gardens placed far from the Citie, do rather hinder the apt bringing of al kinds of hearbes and floures vnto the market to be solde. And for this doth Cato commend greatly that ground or farme place whiche is nighe situated to the Citie: In whyche ground, also be set little trees and plants to beare vp vines, and

what manner of master or Gardiner a fruitful Gardē requireth.

Utilitie and pleasure ensueth of wel dressed Gardens.

why Gardens ought to be nere hand.

that Willowes and Otiers be set in watrie and wette places neare to riuers, and that the ground beside hath moyst & watrie places or springs in it: whereas the Orchards also in moste fruitefull and open places, and that well donged, in the which al kinds of fruite may be set and planted. Plac. neare to ỹ citie (sayth Cato) many and sundry kinds of Gardens, set & decked with al kinds of pleasant floures, al rootes that be rounde, the swæte Myrtle træe, & many other necessarie things of like sort, to be set & sown. But a garth̄ (& especially for pot herbes) must be moyst of it selfe, or else easie to be watered, for fertiltie sake.

¶ Of the standing of Gardens, the water necessarie to them, & of the properties of the ground, with the qualitie & temperatenes of the ayre, & conditiō besides of the windes. Cap. ij.

Where the best & laudablest placing of a Garden is.

AND nowe, to the scituation and standyng of a Garden. The most commodious and profitablest placing of a Garden is, as Palladius sayth, that ỹ same be neare to a plaine field, somewhat lying aslope, and hauing through it small courses of water running as by certaine distances one frō the other through the Garden. But yet beware ỹ these be not ouer great courses, for that the easie and smal courses be more commodious. And this diligently wey, that better is a little ground of pæld, being wel dressed and laboured, than a large ground, hauing no painful labour bestowed in it at all.

What cōmoditie it is to haue a Well in a Garden.

And further vnderstand, that to haue a wel in a Garden, is right necessarie, except the same maye otherwise be watered with some Conduite, or small streame running by, or else be very neare vnto a running water, for water is a gret nourisher to herbes. But if there be no Wel nor swæte water running by, then must you digge a pit, although the same wil be very labourous, to drawe water thereout, in that a Garden of necessitie ought to be oftē watered, through which (as Plinie writeth) it causeth the sædes sown, the sooner to spring vp, spread abrode, and to be the more plentiful. And therefore if you be minded to haue a Well or pitte that should continue with water in it, thē as (Columella teacheth) you must cause the same to be digged

A secrete to cause water long to continue in either pit or wel.

when

when the Sunne is in the laſt part of Virgo, whiche is in the moneth of September, before the Equinoctial Harueſt, or entring of the Sunne into Libra: For at that ſeaſon, do men eſpecially try and finde out, what force and vertue the welles then haue: at what time the ground through the long drought of ỹ Sommer, is then depriued both of moyſture and raine. But if you cannot well dig a pit, then make a little pond or Ceſterne (as Palladius teacheth) vnder the ground, wherby the rain falling al the winter may run thereunto, and by that meanes you may wel water your gardē in the hote ſomer. And if now you lacke all theſe meanes before taught, for the watering of your Garden, then ſhal you dig and make the beds of the Garden in moſt drie places, three or foure foote deeper and lower, that the bankes about thereof being hard made togither, may ſo keepe in the water, which ordered on this wiſe, doth well defende the drineſſe therof, for that in time of the great drought, it is by that meanes watered, and the yong and ſmall plants, be therby the better procured to ſpring faſter vp.

A ſecrete for dry Gardens.

But if the Garden be ouerloyed with water, then dig after thy diſcretion deepe gutters here & there in the Garden, whereby the water falling into them, may be ſo led into ſome deepe pit in the end of the Garden, made for that onely purpoſe. And conſider that in the ground and farme places bordering neare vnto the Citie, the Gardens and Orchards, ſhould and ought to be neareſt the houſe, and both wel digged, & turned in with dung, through the which fatning they may the aptlier ſpring & plentifullier grow. And yet beware ỹ you make not your gardē neare vnto either Barne, Stable, or hay laft, ſo nigh as you can, leaſt the chaffe & duſt, both of the corne & hay, blowen abrod by the winde, fall vpon the herbes, & ſo by cleauing on, pearce through the leaues, which ſo pearced, do by and by after burne them, as writeth Florentinus in his inſtruction of huſbandrye. And beſides, the harde clinging and gathering togither of ſuch ſtrawes and duſt of hay blowen abrode by the winde in the gardē, doth ſo cauſe a great annoyance, both vnto ỹ herbes & plants growing therein. And further take heede, that the ayre

A ſecrete in the conueying of the watre ouercharging the ground.

Chaffe and duſt, be very hurtful to Gardens.

What annoyance the Vapours of stinking ditches do the cause.

about the Garden be not euil, and infected with the Vapors of ditches and stincking puddles, standing neare vnto it, for that these do not only infecte and corrupte the plantes, but dul mens spirites by walking therein. And in consideration hereof, you shall vnderstand, that euery ayre, which is some colde after the Sunne be set, and some hote after the Sunne be risen, is bothe subtile & holesome: But that ayre which is contrary to thys, is, and worketh the contrarie. And besides, the ayre most to be refrayned, is that, which wringeth and byndeth hard the harte, and doth make straight the attraction of ayre.

How a Garden in colde Countreyes ought to lie.

And as concerning the temperateneſſe of the ayre, & holesomneſſe of the place, a Garden in colde countries and places, ought to haue the free skie or firmament opē toward the East, or towards the South part, especially if the same be in suche a Garden or Orchard, that hath yong plants or trees set in it, taking hēde, least that by any great hygh hyll, standing betwēn it and those partes of heauen, it be so excluded from the cōforte and ayde of those two parts, and so eyther through the North, where (to vs) the Sunne is farthest off, or the late sunne shining of the West, where the Sun only shineth at hys going downe, the plants, sēdes, and sets, be so nypped and destroyed with the colde so long vering them.

But if thou canst (sayth Cato) let thy Garden be at the foote of an hyl, and that it beholdeth or lyeth open to the South part, in some wholesome place, and that the hil defendeth the sharpe colde of the Northside, that might otherwise nippe and harme the plants and settes comming vp.

How in hote Countryes a Garden ought most aptly to stand

But in hote countries, let the faces of Gardens be loking or lying open to ỹ North part, which not only is more profitable, but also pleasaunter and commodiouser to healthe. And a marrishe grounde is euermore to be refused, howsoeuer the same be, especially if it lye open towarde the South or Weaste part, and that customably in the Sommer the same be throughlye dryed vppe: whiche so engendereth the Pestilence, and diuerse noysome and hurtefull beastes, that greatlye harme Gardens.

And

And consider also the nature of the Pote standing about, or ỳ water running by youre Garden, whether the same sendeth or vapoureth forth (for the more parte) anye noysome or stinking ayre, whiche might so annoy you, or the settes, hearbes, and plants: For suche is the propertie of manye little riuers. And therfore where any such like is, dresse or plant no Garden nære vnto the same.

The qualitie of Motes about Gardens are to be considered.

And last, the winds are to be cõsidered, for that ỳ south winds be hote and moist, and the North windes colde and drie, and the East windes be betwæne hotnesse and coldenesse temperate, yet dryer than the West windes. And the East winds generally be alwayes hotter than the Weast, and yet the Weast windes be somewhat moyster than the East.

The qualitie of the foure windes.

¶ Of the consideration and choosing out of good & excellent grounde, and the knowledge of euerye earth. Cap. iij.

And there is much to be considered besides those things whiche we haue hitherto spoken of, in the nature and goodnesse of a ground, if so be you desire to knowe a fruitfull, profitable, and a battle ground: For euery grounde doth not kindlye bring vp Garden Hearbes. And therefore after the minde of the auntient husbandmen, you shall consider in this maner, by taking a clod of the same earth in your hand, and marking whether the same be white and bare, or leane with sande, without anye mixture of earth: either all chalke, or naughtie and filthie sande or grauell, or drie barren greate grauell, or stonye barren and glittering dust, or if it be saltie or bitter, or continually wette and moist. For all these be right noyous and great defaultes and incommodities, contrarie to a fruitful ground.

The nature & goodnesse of euery ground ought to be knowne.

And you shall also trie a rotten clod if the same be almoste blacke and able ynough to couer it selfe with his owne grasse, and of sundry coloures: Which if it be thin or mouldrie, muste be fattned and brought togither by fatte earth mired therwyth. But nowe you shal knowe a fatte grounde, if you take a small clod, and sprinckle the same with swæte water, and so kneade it, whiche, if the same be clammie and sticke to your fingers, then

The triall of gardē ground.

How ye maye knowe a good ground.

may ye be out of doubt, that it is fat earth. Also dig a furrow, & fill the same againe with earth, whiche if the earthe dothe after gape or open, then is it a slender and leane ground, but if it reacheth oute, then is it a fatte grounde. And that also is a meane ground, whiche doth gape but little. And thys ground also must be swæte, whiche you shall easily try out by taste thereof, if that oute of a parte of the ground, which most you mislike, you take a clodde, putting the same into an earthen pan, and moistyng it with fresh and swæte water, into which dip your finger, and so taste on your tongue how it relisheth and sauoureth, for by that shall you know the swætnesse of the same.

The tryall of swæte earth fyt for Gardens.

What earth is meetest for Gardens.

And that ground also is thought to be best for Gardens, whiche in the Sommer is neyther drye, nor clayie, nor sandie, nor rough, nor through the heate of Sommer full of chappes. For that the ground, which is so dry in the Sommer, doth perishe all such sæds and plants sowne or set therein, or else maketh them shote vp very small and slender: and the clayie ground bindeth to harde, throughe the heate of the Sunne: and the sandie and roughe ground worke contrarye to the other, in that they neyther nourishe the young plantes, nor kæpe the water any time, falling on them. And to be shorte, you muste euermore chose a fatte and lose grounde, whiche nædeth but small labour, and yældeth also plentifullest and greatest fruite. But that grounde is most to be refused, which is dry and thicke, and bothe leane & colde. And among all kinde of groundes, the chalkie and redde ground are most to to be refused. And of this (Varro) doth commend that ground, which of it selfe being gentle & pliable, bringeth forth Madworthe, otherwyse named Danworts. And that ground also doth Columella commend, which naturally bringeth forth of his owne accorde, bothe Elmes, and wilde young springs, and those trées, whither they be Sowe trées, or Bullas trées, & Wilding or Crab trées. And on suche wise is a fruitfull grounde tryed out and knowen by such things, which the same bringeth forthe, by the onelye doing of nature. And yet euerye ground at times conuenięt, may by the dunging, be made more fruitfull and plentifuller, or bigger yælding.

A fatte and loose ground, is beste commended for Gardens.

The triall of a fruitefull ground

Any grounde by dunging may be made fruitefull.

Howe

¶ How a Garden may diuers wayes be fenced and incloſed: the maner & ſecrete of making a liuely and ſtrong hedge. Cap. iiij.

When you haue thus choſen an apt and fitte plat of ground, to digge a Garden in, then muſt you in handſome manner, caſting the vtter compaſſe of it (as either foure ſquare, rounde, or otherwiſe) encloſe the ſame rounde about, and beſet and fenſe it throughout before you goe about to dreſſe it vp, or ſowe anye thing in the ſame. For that Gardens being not well fenſed and cloſed aboute before the ſowing and ſetting of anye thing in the ſame, be manye wayes endamaged, as well by beaſtes, as by théeues, breaking into them.

And there be many and ſundry ſortes of fenſing and cloſing in of Gardens, as after ſhall appeare As firſt, Varro nameth or coũteth that a naturall encloſure, which is ſet about with yong trées or Thornes, hauing in it ẏ rootes of a quicke hedge, which we call a Quicke ſet Hedge, ſo ẏ the ſame ſhal not be in danger of ẏ wanton wayfaring mans firebrãd paſſing by, although he ſhoulde put fire to it. And that is named a wilde and rude incloſure, whiche either is made of rude and ſhrubbed woodde, or of Willowe, or buſhes hauing no life, whiche we name a Deade Hedge. And in olde time, the Romanes vſed to encloſe and fenſe their Gardens with ſtakes and lathes, ſet very thicke in order, and with ſmall roddes watled in togither, or elſe by boaring large holes through great ſtocks of trées, through which raiſes or great poales might runne two togither, or three togither, and and ſo then raiſe and faſten a board along, or ſtockes of trées or ſuch like things, which maner we now name paling, when the ſame is done with boarde. And that fencing, of the auntient authours, is named a warlike incloſure, which is framed like to ẏ which ẏ ſoldiors make as a defenſe about their Tents, & ſuch a one vſed to be made neare cõmon high waies, or by riuers, that the Garden, might not be endamaged by beaſts, théeues, nor land floudes. And for this cauſe the auntient men frained thys on this wiſe: as firſt, a conuenient and apt ditch or trench was caſte

caste vp and made about the Garden or field, that it might so receiue al the raine water falling there-aboute. And it had also a ridge or slope passage in it, that the water mighte the frælyer passe from the bottome. And there was besides an high heape of earthe on the inside nexte ioyning to the ditch brincke, so drie and harde, that a man coulde not easily climbe or passe ouer it.

Also there were certaine, which made suche stæpe steps without any ditch, whiche they named walles. And they of olde time also, named that a builded inclosure, whiche was made of drye stones or slate laid one vpō another, and that in diuers formes. For either the same was made with clay and stones, workmanly and finely built (in those places specially) by whiche quarreis of stone were nære vnto, or of suche as were of abilitie to gette store otherwise. And either they made their inclosure of baked or vnbaked bricke, or with earth and stones mortered togither, and framed like to the walles of an house.

The profyt & commoditie of a liuely and strong hedge.

But the profitablest hedge of al (especially in the fieldes) and leaste of coste, is that whiche is made with briars and thornes mixed or set togither, for this hedge or inclosure will endure an infinite time. And therfore this hedge (of the auntient husbandmen) was moste commended: For that, the same was well knowen to them, that the Bryar woulde not lightlye perishe and decay, vnlesse the same had bæne plucked vp by the rootes: And after the iniurie also of the fire, it both reneweth and springeth the better.

The maner of erecting of a liuely hedge.

And this kinde of hedge, was easily and wittily made on this maner: First Democritus willeth, and the like Columella, and Palladius, to gather the sædes of the greatest Brembles in due season of the yeare, and the sædes of the white Thorne, named the wilde Eglantine Bryar, bicause in nature they agrée alike, and those Sædes with Sædes of the Brembles (being throughly ripe) they will, to be mixed with the meale of Tares, sprinkled and tempered togyther with water, vnto the thicknesse of hoonye. And after that, they will this kinde of mixture to be laide in olde brawne ropes, or other olde ship-ropes, or in some other vnlosed coardes of ropes, that the sædes laid in the ropes,

all

And in the place rounde aboute, where the hedge shal runne, they will two furlongs to be eared or digged vppe, as three foote asunder, and a foote and a halfe deepe: and this they wil to be done in the end of the Equinoctial of the harueſt, when as the grou̇d is well moiſtned with ſhoures. Columella willeth after the Ides of Februarie.

And they wil also that those furrows so lye all ỹ winter thorough, open and vncouered: In preparing the Sædes in a readineſſe to sowe, against the time.

And after that, in the ende of the moneth of Februarie, they will to lay the saide roapes at length in the furrows, and to couer them so lying in the furrowes with thinne and light earth, and to water the Sædes againe, if nede of the season shall so require: whiche they will so to be ordered, in that these sædes of the Thornes, cannot otherwise shoote vppe and growe, if they were ouermuche couered with earthe: as this day they wil not to be done when the wind bloweth out of the Southweaſt. And so within thirtie daies after, doe the Thornes shoote vp, whiche by preatie, helpes and shorte props, ought to be directed, that shooting vp further, they may so supply the void spaces to make the hedge thicke and strong. And other also made a quicke sette hedge on this wise: Firſte they plante young Elder trées, three foot asunder, and they take the Brembles and wilde Bryar, and put them in long lumps of clay or earth, and set them here and there betweene the Elder trées, couering them orderlye with earthe: and in the comming vp of the yong plants, they digge about and water them, if néd so require. And within three yeres after, the hedge will well defend out both thiefe and beaſt. But after the three yeares growth, the auntient husbandmen wil, ỹ this hedge shoulde be burnte euery yeare once, for that by the burning, they shoote out and ware ſtiffer, harder, and sharper. And to conclude, this is an vniuerſall waye, and the sureſt maner, to encloſe all Gardens. A wittie ſecreate in the fencing of a Garden.

Another way of making a quicke ſette hedge.

Of the firſte Maze. Cap. v.

HEre by the way (gentle Reader) I do place two proper Pazes, the one before this chapter, and the other after, as proper adornments vpon pleaſure to a Garden, that who ſo liſteth, hauing ſuche rowme in their Garden, may place the one of the, which liketh them beſt, in that voide place of the Garden that maye beſte be ſpared, for the onelye purpoſe, to ſporte them in at times, which Pazes being workmanly handled by the Gardner, ſhal muche beautifie them, in deuiſing four ſundry fruits to be placed in each of the corners of the Paze, and in the middle of it, a proper Herber decked with Roſes, or elſe ſome faire tree of Roſemary, or other fruite, at the diſcretion of the Gardener.

The apte times of digging and dreſſing the ground for euery ſeaſon

¶ Of the dung and dunging of Gardens, with the digging, dreſsing, leuelling & diſpoſing of the quarters and beds. Cap. vj.

FOr ſo muche as in the Haruell and Spring time, be many thinges ſowne in the Garden, therefore it behoueth to dig vp, dung, and labor that part of the ground in the Spring time, which you intend to ſowe in the Haruell, that the ſame may ſo ſerue

serue all the winter throughe. And those partes of the Garden which you intend to sow in the Spring time, that they maye bring forth their fruite in the Sommer, those partes applye and turne vp towarde the Northe. And this shall you so digge and dresse, when as the earth shall not be ouer moiste nor drie.

And that ground also, which you will haue in a readinesse to sowe in the Haruest, must be turned vp in the moneth of May, whereby the heate of the Sunne all the Sommer through, may so breake and lose the cloddes, and burne or wither the rootes of the hearbes left in the earth.

And after that, the quarters and beddes of the Garden, be thus finely ordered and tourned in with dung, & sowen also for ỹ Winter, then in the colde winter season, before the yong plants be come vp, they must be defended and nourished with dung (as by sprinckling it on the beds) that it may the better defende the yong plants from the superfluous cold, & corrupting in ỹ deep of winter. But the ground which you wil sow in the Spring time, must be digged vp in the Haruest, about the Calends of Nouẽber: and you shal so let it lye digged vp after the Haruest, to be burnte and consumed by the colde and sharp hoarie frostes.

what ought to be done, after the quarters of the Garden bee thus ordred, and sowen for the Winter.

For like as in Sommer, the heat of the Sunne doth scath and parch the ground, euen so doth the bitternesse of the cold vnlesse

the same into small parts.

Note, that good dung maketh a good ground the better, and greatly amendeth an il erth

And after the winter is ended, then must that part of the garden be dunged. So that when the time of sowing is nere at hãd, then that place of the Garden fiue daies before, shall be wéded, stoned, and dunged againe, and after that digged againe, and with the diligent and often digging, so turned vp, that the earth and dung be well mired togither, and not to lye all togither at the rotes of the plants, but that first, the earth be thin caste, and after the dung, and then the earth againe to couer the same.

How the dũg ought to be ordered.

The worthinesse of dũgs.

For by that meanes shall neither the yong plants be burned, nor the heate of the dung hastily breath forth.

Alles best commended.

And the best and worthiest for this purpose, is Alles dung, because it bringeth vp leaste wéedes: and the nexte to this, is the dung of Kine, Oxen, Horses, Shéepe, and Goates, so that it bée not aboue a yeare olde, harde, and drie, the whiche also hath his full strength, and bringeth vppe leaste wéedes: for if the dung shal be older, it profiteth nothing, for that it is lesser of strength, and yet in Gardens the new dung being thrée daies olde, shall well suffise and serue the turne. But that whiche men make, althoughe it be thought moste excellent, yet is it not so néedefull to be desired, vnlesse that eyther the ground be barraine, grauelly, or a moste lose sande, hauing no strength or force in it, whiche so being, néedeth the greater helpe of nourishment in the dunging. And the swines dung is thought very il, for that the same is hote. Also the Pigeons and Doues dung is moste hote. And yet ashes to dung with, is thought very good, and especially for pot-herbes, being finely sifted, the whiche for his naturall heate, doth not only refreshe the earth, but slayeth and driueth away al Flyes, and al kind of wormes, Snailes, and suche like beastes that annoy the herbs.

Nexte Kine. Oxen, sheepe, horses, goats.

New dung is vnprofitable for Gardens

Swines, Pigeons, and Doues dung beste for potte herbes.

And the like, in a maner, doth the Pigeons dung, so that the same be scattered like séeds on the ground, wherby to season the ground the better, and not on heapes, like the laying of the Oxe or horse dung.

And this also conceyue, that a watery Garden grounde néedeth more dunging: and a dry ground the lesser dunging. And be-

sides

sides these, you may dung your graueliy ground with chalk, if so be you can get no cattels dung, and the like a chalkie or ouer thick ground, you may dung with grauel, for the lacke of other dung. And by that meanes, such Garden grounds be not onlye made battle and good of yealde, but become also beautifull, as writeth Columella.

What to be done in the lack of dung.

And Plinie writeth, that when you dung your Garden, let ẏ winde then blow out of the West, and the Mone decreasing of light, & dry that season so nigh as you can. For by that meanes, doth the ground yealde the plentifuller.

What to be obserued in dunging the Gardens.

And now after the new digging and turning vp agayne, about the middle of Januarie, the Gardē must then be garnished with herbers, before the quarters and beds be cast out & deuised. And you may make the herbers, either straight rūning vp, or else vaulted or close ouer the heade like to the vine herbers now a dayes made.

And if they be made with Juniper woodde, you nede to repaire nothing thereof for ten yeres after: But if they be made with willow poles, then must you new repaire thē euery thre yeare after. And he which will set Roses to run along aboute his herber, or beds round about his herber, must sette them in Februarie.

Juniper poales best commended for the building of herbers.

And the beds of Roses be commonly set in a most short furrow, or be placed by alleis, round about the Garden, whether ye sette them in slips, or sow them in the sedes. And Palladius writeth, that we may not thinke those to be ẏ sedes of ẏ Rose, whiche growe in the middle of the floure, in colour like to the gold: but that the sedes be in that which is like to a smal peare in the vpper end of the stalke.

How Roses ought to be set.

Which the seedes be in the Rose.

And the sedes be then rype to be gathered, when the Grapes be full ripe, which ripenesse of them by their suskish or browne colour, and by their softnesse may be knowen. And in the lyke maner you maye do, if you wil sowe that swete tre or floure named Jacemine, Rosemarie, or the Pomegranate sedes, vnlesse you had rather decke your herbers comelier with vines. And when the herbers be set and made about the walke of the

Garden, then the ground newe digged, muste be diuided into borders and beds, leauing apart that rowme and space, whiche you will bestowe vpon walkes and bowling alleys: the [illegible] alleyes and walkes you shall sifte ouer with the finest sande, least by raine and shoures, the earth should cleaue and clag on your feete. And this done, you shal leuel your beds and borders, of a height and bredth, by a line layde out, wherby the weeders maye the easilier reach to the middle of the beds, to weede the herbes.

Walkes and alleies be necessarie in a garden.

And for this cause the same ought to be made, least that in the weeding the herbes, they treade down the herbes and yong seedes comming vppe. And therefore let the weeders go by the pathes and alleyes, weeding the one halfe first, and the other after. And the beds sayth Palladius, must be made long and narrow, that is. xij. foote in length, and sixe in bredth, and spaces betweene the larger, whereby the beds may the better be weeded cleane on eche side.

Why ye beds ought to be leuelled euē of a bredth.

What length and breadth Palladius willeth the beds to be.

And let the borders or edges of beds be raysed two foote high, in moyst or watrie places: but in dry places, it shal be sufficiēt to rayse them one foote high.

There must be made also certaine little alleyes or gutters, by which the moysture in watrie places may so runne forth. And those alleyes besides, must be deeper than the beddes, that the water gently poured forth, by a watering potte, from the vpper part, may the lightlyer soake into the gutters or alleyes.

How the water lying in the alleys, may be lead from place to place.

And where the beds be well watered, and that water standeth in the alleyes by, then may you from thence leade the water into some other necessarie place, which needeth watering.

Of

Of the ſecond Maze. Cap. vij.

AND here I alſo place the other Maze, which may be lyke ordered and vſed, as I ſpake before, and it may eyther be ſet with Iſope and Time, or with winter Sauery and Tyme: For theſe do wel endure, al ỹ winter through grene. And there be ſome which ſet their Mazes with Lauender Cotten, Spike, Maierome, and ſuch like. But let them be ordered in this point, as liketh beſt the Gardener, and ſo an end. For I doe not here ſet forth this, or the other Maze afore expreſſed, for any neceſſarie commoditie in a Garden, but rather appoint eyther of theſe (which liketh you beſt) as a beautifying vnto your Garden: For that Mazes and knots aptly made, do much ſet forth a Garden, which neuertheleſſe I referre to your diſcretion for that not all perſons be of like abilitie.

¶ Certaine precepts, and rules of auntient men, both in the choyſe and proper ſowing of ſeedes. Cap. viij.

THe Garden, as Palladius writeth, whiche lyeth vnder a gentle and holeſome ayre, and hath a fountaine, Spring,

or swéete water running by it, is in a maner good enough of it selfe, and néedeth the lesse instructions for sowing therof.

The temperatenesse of time necessary to sowing.

The séedes sowne in due chosen time, as concerning ỹ weather, and the Mone, do the soner come vp: but sowne in warme and sunnie places, or wel lying in the Sunne, doeth spédelyest breake forth and shoote vp.

And in colde seasons sow not.

And beware of sowing any séedes, the winde then blowing out of the North, or in very colde dayes, for that in those dayes, the séedes be much hindered through the cold: And therfore for the sowing of your séedes, chose warme and temperate dayes, for the better comforting and spreading forward of your séeds, then lying in the earth.

A defence for the seedes sowne.

And if after the séedes sowne, you doubt eyther the coldnesse or hotenesse of the season, in the scorching or burning of youre séedes, then couer your beddes with the chaffe of corne, & with stickes a crosse ouer the same, and small Rédes or twigges also layde aptly vpon them, for the better defence, as Columella writeth.

When plants are to be sowne.

And all herbes in a maner may wel be remoued, when they shall be somewhat growne and come vp, and the earthe (at the remouing) shal not be ouer drye. The newer séedes, that do somer spring vppe, be these: the Léke, Siue, Cucumber, and the Gourde.

The variety in comming vp of new & olde seedes.

And the old séedes that do spédilyer spring vp, be these, the Parcely, Béetes, Cresses, Sauerie, Maierome, Penyroyall, and Colyander. And the séedes sowne in hote places, doe spédelyer shoote vp in stalkes, and soner yélde their séedes.

And the séedes that soonest breake and come vp, be Bessil, Spynage, Nauew, which is a kinde of Rapes, and Roket: for all these at the thirde dayes sowing, appeare aboue the ground, and yet the slowest of all séedes cometh vp Parcely.

A secrete to make Leekes and Onyons begin the heade.

And to put many séedes into one hole in the ground, shall all gather into one substaunce, and bring forth the greater fruite: Like as you shal put many heades of Léekes or Onyons, into one hole togither, and treading the blades often downe in the growing, and shoting vp.

And

And ỹ Lettuce, Parcely, Roket, & Basil, may grow al togither out of one stemme or stalke, take two or three smal bals of the Goate or Shæpes dung, and those breake, and mingle ỹ sædes togither in them, and after roll al togither into a rounde ball, whiche after sette into newe Cowe dung, and couering the same with well dressed and fine earth, that gentlye water.

A rare secret in causing sundrie plãts to grow out of one stalke.

And some do take two or three of the shéepes or goates dũg, and breaking them, do so mingle the sædes and dung togither, which they after lappe in a linnen cloth, and order the same in the ground, as afore is taught.

A secrete not vnlike to the former.

And that many sauours and tastes may be felt in one herbe: take first of the Lettuse two or three sædes, of the Endiue so many, of the Smallache the like, of the Basil, of the Læke, and of the Parcely, (of all these three) so many sædes as the others, then put all the sæds into a hole togither, and in such sort, that the sædes maye touche one another: but this before remembred, that you put them togither in the dung of a horse or Dre, wythout any earth mingled with them. And thus sowne, there wil after spring vp a plant, hauing so many sauours or tastes, as there were sædes sowne togither.

A maruelo us secret in causing many sauours to be felt in one hearbe.

¶ Of the times in sowing, and proper ordering of seedes, with the watering and weeding of the yong plants in the cõming vp, the diuerse manner of remouing and setting again of the hearbes being somewhat growne vp. Cap. ix.

ALthough the auntient husband men appoint certaine prescript times, as by monthes and days, yet the same ought to be considered, according to the nature of the place, and condition of the ayre, so that you way thys with your selfe, whiche we shall after teach, that there be certain sædes which do spædylyer spring vp, and certaine which do later come vp.

The nature of the ground and qualitie of the aire are to be considered in the sowing of seedes.

And as touching the Garden hearbes, they (after their sowing) requiring none other diligẽce and care, but only raking, wæding, and watring. For that by due raking, both the stones are voyded alwaye from the newe springing sædes, and all the

What is required after the sowing of garden seeds.

noyous wéedes that hinder the herbes, comming vppe, are the better wozne away.

What maner weeding herbes, is best commended.

And yet the cleaner wéeding and plucking vp of yll rotes, must be done with the hande: which differeth from the kyllyng of wéedes by raking. And of these also whiche must harme the beddes newe sowen is, to walke much by them, oz to moue the earth, when the same shal be verie lose: foz thereby it settleth fast the ground, that it maketh wéedes the harder to be plucked vp, after much raine falling.

The seasonable time of watering, & what manner water ought to be vsed.

And the watering of your dry beddes, which often happeneth foz lacke of raine and moysture, about the hotte and drye dog dayes, muste chiefliyest be done with luke warme water, and that every mozning and euening, as Plinie wryteth, if néede so require, with that water whiche timelye in the mozning is drawne out of no déepe Well, and reserued in some wodden vessell foz thrée houres before, oz as (some doe wzite) that it be set vnder the skie foz two oz thrée dayes togither, that the Sunne maye the better wozke vppon it. And water not youre beddes too muche, foz that the same harmeth and weakneth the rotes and plantes. And to this water also myngle a lyttle dung, the whyche shall gyue the better nourishemente wyth the water to the Herbes, and yong Plantes commyng vppe, if it be leasurelye and gently watred forth.

The manner and forme of watering of herbes.

And the yong tender plants newe sprong vp, néede lesse watering than the stronger grown, which desire a great deale the more wateryng, yet the same to be leasurelye done, that the rotes may drinke alike of it, and not be hastily drowned with water. But colde, and salt water, drawne out of déepe Wels, is most hurtful vnto all plantes and herbes, excepte the same stande foz certaine houres in the hote Sunne, and be watered warme on the plants.

And such séedes as oughte only to be sowne neare the ende of Harueste, as in the moneth of September oz October, that they may all the winter continue, and be soaked in the ground, be these: Garlyke, Onyons, Scalions, yong Léeke heades,

great

great Garlike, and Muſtarde ſéede.

If of neceſſitie you muſt plante or ſowe anye thyng in a ſalte grounde, then that what it be, muſte be planted in the ende of Haruеſt, or ſowed the like, that the euilneſſe and corruptneſſe of the grounde maye be waſhed away with the winter ſhoures. And if ye ſet anye yong trées in that grounde, let that thereaboute be myxed wyth ſwéete Earthe and Ryuer ſande. What is to be done in a ſalt ground.

And your ſéedes (that you minde to ſowe) may not be aboue a yeare olde, and that bruſed be whyter within, and heauyer: leaſt being corrupt by oldneſſe, they may not encreaſe & come forwarde. The knowledge of ſeedes meete for ſowing.

The thirde moneth ſowing agréeth in colde and ſnowie places, where the qualitie of Sommer is moyſt, but ſeldome in other places the like happe correſpondeth.

And ſéedes thrée monethes olde, will better agrée, if that in hote places they be ſowne in the Haruеſt.

And you may plant and ſowe in your grounde (if you wyll) the beſt kinds of euery fruite, ſéedes, ſlyppes or graffes, but ſet and ſowe that (which you knowe by experience) will beſt proſper, and come forewarde in your ground. A good tryall of euery ground.

But any newe kinde of ſéedes, and not tryed before in your ground, you may not put your whole hope that vndoubtedlye they will proſper, in that it is doubtful whether they wil proſper or no. A tryal of rare ſeedes in your garden.

And in moyſte places, the ſéedes do ſooner ſpring vp, than in the drye: and this vnderſtande, according to the kind, and proper nature of them. And of this, the choyſe of grounde in the ſowing of your ſéedes muchauayleth.

And all ſuche ſettes and Séedes do ſeldome proſper whyche be ſowne or ſet in ſhadowy places. And ſuch things alſo as doe flower, in ỹ time of their flower bearing, are not to be handled. Shadowy places hurtful to plants.

And all kinde of pulſes, as Peaſon, Vitches, Tares, &c. (as the Greéke Authours will) muſt be ſowne in drye ground, except the Beanes, whiche ought onely to be ſowne in moyſte ground.

What seedes may be sowen at pleasure of the Gardener

And such sédes, which at will and pleasure maye be sowne (as both in harueſt and ſpring time) vnto your vſe and commoditie, and that in a warme and comfortable ſeaſon and fruitful ground be theſe, the Lettuce, the Colewortes, the Parſnips, the Carrottes, the white Poppie, the Artochokes, and diuerſe other ſéedes.

A conſideration in the ſowing of ſeedes in hote and cold ground.

And in colde Countreys, the Haruеſt ſowing muſt be done earlier, and the ſpring later. But in hote countreys, the Haruеſt ſowing muſt be later and the ſpring timelier.

And whatſoeuer you wil ſowe, let the ſame be done after ỹ fourth day of the new Moone, and ſo continue vnto the full of ỹ Moon: but no longer: in that it oftentimes ſo happeneth, that ỹ ſowing of ſédes in the decreaſe or waine of the Moone, proſpereth not, as witneſſeth Auenezra.

And ſuch things alſo as you wil cut downe or gather, let the ſame be done in the wayne of the Moone. But ſuche things as you minde to ſell, let thoſe be gathered in the full Moones, becauſe the greater they do then abide, the vendibler or readier they wil be to be ſold.

What ſeaſon beſt commended for the ſowing of ſeedes.

And all ſédes which be kindely ſowne, be rather ſowne in temperate weather, when as ſome ſhoures of rain moyſtning the ground, fall a day or two before, rather than in a dry ſeaſon and colde ayre: For that the ſédes lyke ſowne, doe ſpédilyer ſpring vp through the warmeneſſe and comforte of the ſeaſon, than in a colde ayre, which of propertie doth both include them in the earth, and kéepeth them long in comming vp.

And yet it oftentimes ſo happeneth, that although the ſédes be perfect good, that they ſpring not after their ſowyng, through ſome malice of the celeſtial bodies. And for that cauſe, ſowe ſundry ſédes togither, for the ſurer tryall and proofe of them.

When plants may beſt be remoued, and of the commodity by remouing them.

And after all theſe, the moſt or greateſt number of plantes, may well be remoued when they be ſomewhat ſprong vp, ſo that the ground be not ouer dry nor ouer moyſt.

For by remouing, ſuch plants may the better be wéeded (being thinne ſet) and grow the better vnto their full bigneſſe, and

be

be also swéter, so that they gently lose and wéd away alwaies all the euill wédes that spring vp amongst them, which otherwise woulde hinder and take away their nourishment.

And those hearbes also which ought not to be remoued, after their young comming vp, muste be thinne sowne, but those whiche ought to be remoued, must be thicke sowne togither. A good instruction of sowing seedes.

¶ Certaine helpes and secretes for the Garden seedes, as well before as after the sowing of them, that they maye not bee harmed by any inwarde or outwarde meanes. Cap. x.

AND now in vaine hath the Gardner (or any other) bestowed his paines, in the diligent laboring of his ground, and committing of sédes to the earth, if in like maner he séke not those meanes which may best auoyde the harme of the Birdes, scraping vp the sédes, and the other beastes and wormes créeping in the earth. And to auoide these harmes and dammages, marke diligently these instructions hereafter taught.

And first, if your Sédes a little before the sowing, be stéped or soaked in the iuyce of the hearbe named the house Léeke, or for lacke of sufficient plentie of the hearbe, to lay the sédes all a day and night in, you may in steade thereof, séeth the hearbe in faire water, and with that water you may sprinckle your séeds sowne in the beds, that they may so drawe to them, and drinke in of ỳ iuice, which by that means doth only defēd, that neither the Birdes, Ants, or Pismiers, Fieldmise, nor anye other vermin, wil at any time after touche those sédes or yong plants after sprung vp, but cause thē encrease the better, as writeth the worthie Columella, who of experience is often noted true. Worthie secreates in preseruing the seedes sowen in the erth without harme.

And Africanus writeth, that if you séeth a little wheate or barley in wine, or soake it in the wine, with the rote Hellebor, or otherwise Mosewort, and after scatter it in the paths, and alleys aboute the Garden, that the same not onely defendeth the séeds frō the iniurie of birds, that maketh them séeme as deade, or rather as drunken by eating thereof, whiche being on this wise, he willeth to hang by the legs, on a sticke, vnto the fearing A secrete that the seedes be not destroyed of birdes.

A marueilous matter of the decoction of Riuer Creuilles.

And the sayde Africanus writeth, that the decoction of the Riuer Creuilles, sprinckled on the sædes, doth both defende the sædes, and the yong plantes sprung of the sædes, that neyther the Birdes nor anye other creeping thing will after (a matter greatly to be marueiled at) neuer touche them. And there bee some, whiche will, after the young plants be somewhat sprung vp, to sprinckle only of the water wherein the Creuilles be sodden, as a sure defense, whiche many times hathe bin tried, and found true by sundry, if so be the same be done at a certain time of the Mone.

A secreate of the Greeke & Latine husbandmen for the preserning of seeds very notable.

And the pouder of the Harts horne, either filed or shauen, and the same infused in sweete water, and the sædes before the sowing soaked therein, or sprinckled with that water after the sowing, doth wel defend the yong plantes from being gnawne of any creeping thing.

And the sædes after the sowing, sprinckled wyth the brine water made of Nitre, doth well defende them from being eaten of wormes, antes, and suche like, as Vergil in hys husbandrye writeth.

And the Greeke Author Apuleius writeth, the only sprinckling of wine on the sædes and yong plants, to be a means of the better strength and encrease of them.

And certaine Greeke writers of husbandrye, allowed of Plinie, Columella, and Palladius, affyrme, that the rots of the wild Cucumber, soaked in sweete water for a daye and a nighte, and that water often sprinckled on the sædes, and the nexte daye following (those sædes couered with a blanket) and after sowen in the ground, that then they be defended from al noisome worms, and other creeping things.

A secrete of the speckled Code.

And the Greeke Author Apuleius writeth as a safegard vnto your sædes, that if before the digging and casting vp of your beds, you draw aboute the Garden the speckled Tode, and putting him into an earthen potte, you do after bury him in middle of your Garden, or ouerwhelme him with earth in a deepe furrowe, which let there remaine vnto the sowing time, and after digge him vp, casting him a great way off, least the plants growing

wing therabout, might become bitter and vnsauory. And the Egiptian and Greek Authors of husbandrie write, that the yong plants shal not be gnawne nor harmed of any creeping thing, if the seeds be sowne about the first quarter of the Moone.

And Democritus writeth, that if you put ten Sea or Ryuer Creuisses into a vessell full of water, and couering it, you sette the same abroad to be sunned for ten dayes and soake your seeds for other eighte dayes in that water, whiche after the minde of Democritus sowe in youre beds. And after the yong plantes of those Seeds be sprung vp, they will not driue Cattell and other small beasts from the eating of them, but all other creeping things from the gnawing of them.

A phisicke experiment of Democritus, that after the plantes be come vp, they shall not be harmed of beasts nor of any creeping things.

But further of these helpes shal be taught in that Chapter, where we write of the diuers remedies against sundry beasts, wormes, flies, and suche like, that commonly annoy Gardens.

¶ Certayne speciall times to be noted and obserued, eyther for their ayde and fauour to be chosen, or for their annoyaunce and incommoditie to be eschewed, for sowing, planting, or graffing. Cap. xi.

The more of valure our stuffe and labour thereabout is, the more circumspect we ought to be, and the more aide thereto we may get, or the greater daunger therein we may auoide, the more carefull euery wise man will be.

And the dayly experience is our schoolemaister, to instruct vs how much it preuaileth or hindreth for seedes to be sowne, plantes to be set, or Siens to be grafted in this or that time, hauing respect not only to the time of the yeare, as the Sunne altereth it, but also to the encrease or wayne of the Moone, to the signe she is in, and to the places of heauen aboue, or vnder the earth, and to the aspectes also of other plants, whose beames of lighte and influence, both quicken, comforte, preserue, and maintaine, or else nippe, drie, wither, consume and destroye by sundrye wayes, the tender seeds, plantes, and grafts, according to their nature and force naturall or accidentall.

Herein

Herein first presupposing, the due circumspection of the choise of ground, & other things generally required in this. And therefore accordyng both to the authoritie of the wise and experte Astronomers, as also the ware & prudent experimenters, in eyther sowing or planting, or other like practise, aboute Hearbes, Plantes, or Trees, haue lefte vnto vs for our commoditie these rules following, that are to be vnderstanded and kept in causes of importaunce, and where the occasion may be taken.

When Saturne and the Mone are eyther threescore degrées of the Zodiacke asunder, (whiche distaunce is called a Sextile aspect, thus commonly marked ⚹) or when they are asunder. 126 degrées, which is called a Triangle, Trygon, or Tryent aspect, then is it good to labor the earth for either sowing, tilling, gardning, vining, or building.

But when they are a quarter of the Zodiacke asunder, called a Quartile aspect, whiche is. 90. degrées, then meddle not in such matters. For when they are in places oppolite one to an other, as if the one be in Aries, and the other in like nũber of degrées in Libra, and so of Taurus, and Scorpio. &c.

The full Mones are not good for this purpose, speaking generally, as we nowe doe, the Mone being neare the Dragons taile, is not good, but neare the Dragons heade is good. Al other things being presupposed equal, and moste briefly for this little treatise, to knit vp other obseruations depending of the Mones places onely, consider these following.

The Mone being betweene the. 28. degrée of Taurus, and the eleauenth of Gemini, sow. And the Mone beyng betweene the 28. of Gemini, and the sixte of Cancer sowe not. And from ỳ sirt of Cancer, vnto the. 19. of the same, sowe and plowe. And from ỳ 28. of Leo, vnto the. 11. of Virgo, sowe & plant. And from thence vnto the. 24. of Virgo, builde, sowe, and plant. And from the. 24. of Virgo vnto the. 7. of Libra, sowe and plowe: and from thence vnto the. 19. sow and plant. And from the. 6. of Capricornus, vnto the. 19. of Capricornus, sowe. And from the. 24. of Pisces, vnto the. 7. of Aries, sowe. Besids al these, you may by your naturall reason, easily finde this rule of the olde writers to be well noted

to

to vs, that if either in a very moiſte grounde, or elſe the ſéedes you ſowe, be ſéeds of great moiſture, that then you ſhal commodiouſly chooſe the ende of the Mones wayne, when ſhe is verye neare hir chaunge, but if either your ground be of the drieſt, or youre ſéedes, then the Mone waxing, and towarde the ful, is fitteſt, as Plinie witneſſeth.

And the more of theſe you can find at your time concurring, the better it is, as in good grounde, well dreſſed, in due ſeaſon of the yeare, in due time of the Mones age, in due time of hir place in the Zodiacke, in due aſpect of Saturne, wel placed in the ſight of heauen. &c. And vnleſſe your ſtuffe be good, all this preuaileth not. And beſides that, the common Almanackes vppon particular aſpects incident for the time, do now and then exactly warn you of times good to plant in, as commonly when the Mone is in Taurus, and Aquarius, or to ſow in, as whē ſhe is in Taurus, Cancer, Virgo, Libra, and Capricornus, or when anye of theſe ſignes, are aſcending in the Eaſt angle. And when Mars neyther regardeth the aſcendēt, or the Mone, but that he be weakly placed in the ſcituation of the heauens for that time.

A great many of other rules as concerning the particular fauour or hinderaunce of the heauens, might (and that neceſſarily) haue bene brought in this place, but neither is it in my purpoſe, for this preſent, eyther to be long in writing or darke in ſenſe.

And perchance, the moſt part of the common ſort of people, wyll thinke thoſe thinges ſomewhat aboue their capacitie, yet my conſcience bound me ſomwhat to put ſuch matter into their heads occaſioning them thereby (where the daintineſſe and value of the ſéeds or ſettes ſo require) to vſe the counſaile of ſome ſuche as both may expounde them theſe rules, and giue them ouer alike, if néede be.

Euen here you muſt preſuppoſe all things on your part fully and duely firſt prepared and well appointed, and then to wayte for, or take héede to ſuche times as here are noted, for the working of the planets therein.

¶ Certaine helpes and ſecrets againſt haile, lightnings, tempeſts, miſts, ruſte, froſts, and burning heate. Cap. xij.

SEyng the ſéeds, plants, and hearbs, ſowen and ſette in the Garden, be after in daunger of haile and miſts, and other ſtormye weather, whiche greately diſcomfite the Gardener or (at the leaſte) ſuche, whiche hope to haue profit and commoditie by the herbes ſowen and ſet in the Garden: Therfore for the better auoyding of theſe dangers, the auntient huſbandmen and ſkilfull Gardners, haue founde oute by practiſe, ſundrye remedies againſt ſuch weather.

And firſt againſt haile, the auntient huſbandmen counſaile to compaſſe the allies of the garden, about with the white vine.

Helpes and ſecreats againſt haile at hand.

And Philoſtratus willeth, that when we ſée the haile neare at hande, then to compaſſe the alleis aboute wyth the ſkinne of the Sea Calfe, or elſe the beaſte Hiena, or the Crocodile, and to hang any of theſe ſkinnes alſo at the enteraunce or comming in of the Garden.

Helps againſt lightnings. out of the Greekes and Columella.

And the Grékes wryte, that the Garden ſhall not be harmed by lightenings, if that the ſame aboute be couered wyth the hyde of the riuer horſe, named Hippopotamon. And Columella wryteth, that if you compaſſe the alleis of youre Garden about with the white Vine, or hang the Owle in the Garden with the wings abroad, that either of theſe do defend the Garden from lightnings. And ſundry doe plant the Bay trée in dyuers places of the garden, as a defence to it againſt lightnings.

The Baye tree not harmed by lightnings.

And Archibius wrote vnto Antiochus King of Syria, and dyuers antient men the like, that if you burye the ſpeckled Tode enclоſed in a new earthen pot, in the middle of youre Garden, that the ſame defendeth it from hurtfull weather and tempeſts.

Helps againſt thicke miſtes, and froſte.

And ſome hang the Egles feathers, or the ſkinne of ẏ Sea calfe in the middle of the Garden, or in the foure corners of the ſame as a proued defence to it againſt tempeſts. And if thick miſtes do harme thy Garden, then burne heapes of chaffe, wéedes, or ſhrubbes in ſundry places, for that the ſmoke ſhall muche helpe to this matter. And Diophanes in his rules of huſbandrye, willeth

leth to gather togither the deade wéedes, or suche like matter, and to burne them on heaps in many places about the Garden, but especially in that parte, which way the wind then bloweth, that it may so carrie the smoke through the Garden, for by that meanes, it is thoughte to auoide and putte awaye the euill and harme of the myste, then eminent or at hand.

And when rust is falling on the hearbes, then Bericius in his husbandrie instructions, willeth to burne the lefte horne of the Oxe, with Oxe dung, and to make a greate smoake foorthwyth rounde aboute the Garden, but especially that way whiche the winde then bloweth, whereby all the smoake through the wind maye so be carried against the violence of the ruste falling, whiche by that meanes shall beare off the noysome occasion of the ayre. Helps against ruste presente.

And Apuleius writeth, that if you make a smoke with ẏ burning of thrée Creuisses, & Oxe dung, or Goats dung, or chaffe, ẏ same to be a most present remedy against the rust And certaine Gréekes wryte, that a Garden sowen with beanes, both within, and without, they do defend it from being harmed by frosts. A secreate against froste oute of the Greekes.

And both Bericius and Anatolius write, that if you soake the rootes or leaues of either the wilde Cucumber, or Coloquintida brused, in water, and sprinckle your hearbes taken with ruste, before the rising of the Sun, that the same recouereth the herbs. Helps against rust that fell before the sun rising.

And the saide Anatolius writeth, that if you stéepe your séeds in the water of the rootes of the wilde Cucumber, before you sowe them, that the same defendeth them from all harmes of the wormes, flies, and all other créeping things.

And Apuleius writeth, that if you plant the Bay trée in manye places of youre Garden, that the same putteth awaye the harmes of the ruste, as hath often bin experienced.

And that burning heate harme not your Garden, whiche cōmonly commeth about the Canicular or dog dayes, Plinie willeth to burne and make a smoake of thrée Creuisses about your groūd, and vnder your vine, as a good remedy against the same. A secreate agaynste burning heate.

¶ Certaine helpes and ſecretes againſt the Garden wormes, the greene flyes, the Canker wormes, the greate Mothes, the Snailes with ſhels, and wythout ſhels, that harme and gnawe aſwell the leaues of trees and fruites, as the herbes and yong plantes comming vppe. Cap. xiij.

Garden grounds harmed by dyuers iniuries.

AND forasmuch as it is apparant vnto al mens eies, that the herbes & yong plantes after they be come vp, be diuerſly in danger to certain ſmall beaſts & creeping things, liuing aſwell vnder the earth, as aboue, that cauſe the plants oftentimes to become weake, if they be not ſpedily loked vnto for remedye. And ſuch alſo is that gret encreaſe & abundance of them, that by all meanes poſſible that can be deuiſed either with fire, ſmoaks, or Iron, they may not after be vtterly expelled & driuen oute of the Garden, being there once lodged in the ground: Wherfore that theſe annoyances to the Garden, may by the diligent induſtry of the Gardener be the better deſtroyed, and that he may receiue the more commoditie and profit by his herbs, floures, & rotes, therefore ſhall here be declared ſuche ſpeciall remedies, as the auntiente and late writers haue inuented, and by their diligence practiſed, vnto the great comfort of the Gardener, and to him which hath delight in a Garden.

A harde expeditige ſometime of creaping things oute of Gardens.

Remedies againſte the Garden wormes.

And firſte Africanus, in his learned worke of Huſbandrye writeth, that if you ſmoke the holes of the wormes, with drye Dre or Cowe dung, that way whiche the winde then bloweth, that it doth expell them from the eating or gnawing after of your herbes. And Plinie wryteth, that the pure mother or feme of the oyle, without ỹ mixture of ſalt, ſprinckled on the worms, doth alſo driue them away.

And if the wormes hang to the rotes of the plants, or herbs, through the naughtineſſe of the dung, then weede the beds and plants very diligently.

And Frontius writeth, that the herbes ſhall not be harmed of the Garden flye, if that by a naturall meanes, you do plant or ſowe in manye places amongeſt your herbes, the herbe named Roket,

And

And Anatolius in his husbandry instructions writeth, that the Garden flyes be killed with the sprinkling of sharpe vinegar (mingled with the iuyce of Henbane) on them. And the lyke doth the sodden licour or water of the herbe, named Fleabane, as writeth Pamphilius the Greeke, in which the herbe named Nigella Romana, hath for a time bin soked and sprinckled, kyll the garden flyes. Remedies against the grene flyes of the Garden.

And if you will not haue your Sedes after the sowing, to be gnawen or eaten of any creeping things in the Garden, then before the sowing, soke your Sedes in the iuyce of the hearbe named Sengreene or houselecke, as before was taught.

And Anatolius wryteth, that the seedes shall not be gnawen, if you sow or set them in the ground in the shell of a Tortoise.

And Palladius wryteth, that your pot herbes shall not engender noysome wormes, or other creeping things, if that you drye the Sedes, before the sowing in a Tortoise skinne, or else sette the herbe myntes in many places, and especially amongthe Colewortes: and the like as some write doth a little quantitie of the bitter fitches or tares (sowne amongst) preuaile, especially if the same be sowne among the radishes, and rapes. Also the auntient writers wyll, that the Ciches, which be a grayne like to Peason, be sowne in manye places amongst the potte herbes, for a surer defence against al creeping things.

And Frontius writeth, that if the pot hearbes be sprinckled with the brine made of gose dung, that the same defendeth the herbes from being gnawen of the Garden wormes, or other creeping things.

And now as touching the Caterpillers which the Greekes named Palmer wormes, that greatlye annoye and spoyle the herbes of the Garden, Plinie wylleth, that yeu sprinckle the Plants or trees with bloudy twygges, as a speciall remedy to dryue them so away. Diuerse helps and secretes against the Caterpilers.

And other auntient writers teach, that if you hang riuer Creuises in many places of the garden, that ẏ same doth likewise dryue away the Caterpillers.

And certaine others wyll, that you ſprinckle the plantes with the deaw of that water, in which the vine aſhes haue bin ſoked, as a preſent remedie.

And there be other whiche will, that about the bodies and armes of the trées, ye kindle and make a ſmoake of Brimſtone and vnſleaked lime togither, as a ſpecial remedy to driue them away.

Singular practiſes againſt the Caterpilers.

And there are certaine other, which firſt do ſoften the ſéedes in that lie which is drawen and made of the Figge aſhes, before they ſow them in the ground, or rather in the bloud of the Caterpillers, or in the iuyce of the herb named ỹ houſe Léeke: And ſome will alſo, to ſprinckle of the figge aſhes vppon the Caterpillers.

Diuerſe helps againſt the Caterpilers.

And certaine rather will, that you ſowe this hearbe in faſhion to a big Onyon, and named of the Apothecaries Squilla, in the Garden, or hang the ſame here and there, aboute the Garden, for a preſente remedie againſte the Caterpillers.

Remedies very notable in driuing away quite of the Caterpilers.

And ſome wyl, to burne the Toade ſtooles or Mulheromes, whych growe out of the Walnut trée, and be ſtiffe and harde, that with the ſtrong ſauour of them, they may ſo be deſtroyed. And ſome do write, ỹ ſauor made of ỹ only dung of Backes, in many places of the Garden, will deſtroye them. And if the Caterpillers doe yet withſtand theſe former helpes, then vſe this practiſe here vnder taught, whiche is, that you take Dre piſſe, and the mother of Dyle, and mixe them equally togither, after ſet the ſame ouer ỹ fire vntil it be hote, and taking ỹ ſame of, let it coole, which being colde, ſprinckle on the pot herbes & trées, and the ſame ſhall deſtroy them, as Anatolius writeth of experience.

And Palladius writeth, that if you burne ſmall bundels of Garlike blades without heades, making a ſmoake with them in the Alleis and pathes of the garden about, that the ſame wil flea them with the only ſauour.

And certaine Gréeke writers will, that you take a fewe of the Caterpillers in the next garden or Orchard, and ſéeth them

in

in water with the herbe Dyl, whyche being colde, sprinckle on the herbes or trees, and in such places where they be, and the same shall destroy thē. But take very diligent hēde, that none of thys water fall eyther on your face or hands.

A practise of the greke husbandmen against the Caterpilers.

And some will, to burne of Galbanum, or the houes of Goates, or the Hartes horne, making a smoke in the Garden whiche waye the winde then bloweth, as a speciall remedy to slea them.

And there be some which will, that you steepe the Aine ashes in water, for thrée dayes, and after sprinckle plentifully of the same on your herbes and trees, as a present remedy to drine away the Caterpilers.

A singular sprinckling stock to drine away the Caterpilers.

And Diophanes the Créke wryteth, that the Mothes whiche kill the Lékes may be destroyed on this wise, if that you take the mawe of a weather shépe newe killed, not washed, but hauing all the filth hanging thereon, which lightly couer or poulder with earth in that place, where they most swarme in the Garden, and after two dayes, you shall finde a maruellous companie of the mothes and other flyes heaped thereupon, which eyther carrie away, or bury very dépe in that place, that they ryse not againe. And when you haue thus done but twice or thrice togither, you shall vtterly destroy them for cōming any more.

And against snayles, both with shell, and without shell, the newe mother or fome of Dyle sprynckled on them, doth greatly preuaile, and the like doth the swte of Thymneys, scattered on the beds, drine them away,

Helps against Snayles.

And Iulius Fronto writeth, that all pot herbes be greatlye holpen and defended from noysome Beastes, if by them ỳ herbe Roket be eyther sowne or set.

A secrete for pot herbes out of Iulius Fronto.

¶ Certaine

¶ Certaine helpes and secretes, against the Garden Moles, Pisemires, Gnattes, Flies with the long hinder legges, Breses, field Mise, Backes, Serpentes, Frogges, and Todes, whiche gnawe, harme, and destroye as well the trees and fruytes, as other herbes and floures. Cap. xiiij.

Why Moles are a disquiet and griefe to Gardeners.

AND for that the Moles in many places of gardens, through their digging and casting vp, do leaue bare both the sedes, and yong plants comming vp, to the vttermost destruction of the good increase of them, which by that meanes doth not a litle disquiet and greeue the Gardener, to see his painefull labors so to be subuerted and come to ruine, contrary to hys expectation hoped after. And therefore suche helpes against their malice, as eyther the auntient Grekes, or the Latinists haue writen of, shal here be vttered.

A proper secrete to driue away Moles in the earth.

And first the Grekes write, that the Moles will at no time dig or cast vp in the Garden, where the herbe named Tickewede, otherwise in Latin Palma Christi, doth eyther grow of their own accord in that ground, or brought otherwise by hap, and there set.

And both Paxamus and Sotion the Greke, write, that if you take a Walnut and boare a hollowe hoale, filling the same afterwarde with Chaffe, Rosen, and Brimstone, and caused to smoake, put the same into the bigger and newer hoale of hys comming forth of the earth, stopping diligently all his other hoales, and that none of the smoke passe forth. And in such sort leaue that one and bigger hoale wyde open, that the ayre may the better driue the smoake into the earthe, whiche after the Mole feeleth the sauour thereof, doeth eyther forthwith runne some other way from thence, or is found choaked and dead in the earth.

An easie practise of the ancient husbandmen in taking of Moles.

And some write, that you may take all the Moles in youre garden by an easie manner. If that you get a quicke Mole, put the same into a deepe earthen pot, setting the edge to the earth, which Mole, after a while feeling himselfe thus inclosed, wyll

cry

crie out, and after the other Moles in that grounde doe thus heare him crye, they will hastily drawe neare vnto him, and minding to helpe him forth, will so fal into the potte. And now by thys easye meanes if you wil, you may take and destroy al the Moles in your Garden.

And some wyll, to take the rote of the white Nosewort, making the same into fine pouder, and after mixing it with barley meale, to worke it togither with milke & wine, & after make it vppe into little balles, whyche laye wythin the hoales of the Moles. And Albertus writeth, that if you stoppe the hoales of Moles, wyth eyther Garlyke, Onyons or Leekes, that anye of these, doe eyther force hym forthwith to runne from that place, or to cast vppe a newe in some other place.

Diuerse special remedies either to kil or driue away Moles.

And some wyll to bryng vppe Cattes, to runne onely in the Garden, for the better dryuing of them awaye: And some also doe bring vp Weasels tame, letting them after runne vp and downe in the Garden, and to runne into the hoales of the Moles, whyche throughe theyr slyncke in hunting after the Moles, do so dryue them out of the ground.

A proper hunting and dryuing away of Moles out of the garden.

And some will to fill the mouth of the hoale, with the pouder of the red marking stone, or redde Oker, mixed with the iuyce of the wylde Cucúber. And some wil, to take Galbanum and Brymstone, fylling a Walnutte Shell therewyth, and to make a smoake into the hoale, whyche so driueth them away.

And Palladius writeth, that if you beskryke the lower part of your trée with red Oker, mixed with Tarre, and hang a Jay therby, that the same doth so gather pismiers al into one place, that you may after easily destroy them.

And certayn others wil, to annoynt the stalkes of Plantes, & bodies of trées with the Dyle made of Lupines, or rather with the pouder of ỹ Lupines, mixed with Dyle. And sundry write, that they may be destroyed with the only mother or some of Dyle sprinckled on them.

And Palladius wryteth, that you may driue away the great

heape and swarme of the Pysmyers gathered togither, if into their heape you put the harte of an Owle: and if the Pismyers runne and straye abroade in your garden, then strew or sift Ashes in the alleyes and pathes about where they runne. And it doth likewise auayle against their straying abrode, if that you bestrike the pathes where they runne, eyther wyth brighte whyte chalke, or wyth Oyle, as hathe béene experienced.

Palladius a maruellous practiser against the Pismyers.

And the sayd Palladius writeth, that you maye drive away the Pysmiers, if into their hoales you sprinckle of the poulder of the Organnie and Brymstone myxed togither, or if you fil and stuffe the hoales of the Pisemyers, with the poulder made of dry Oyster shelles burned, it doth likewise destroye them.

And Paxamus writeth, that if you take of the Pismyres, & burne of them in the middle of the Garden, that the rest will forsake the ground. And the sayd Authour writeth, that if you make a smocke with Rosen before their hoales, they will not after come forth, but forsake the place.

Other practises against the Pismiers

And he also writeth, that if you compasse them with white wool, Chalke, or redde Oker, or else strewe round about them, the herbe named Organnie, but especially those wayes where they haue common course. For then neyther wyl the Pysmiers come neare that plante where it is, nor runne vp that Tree, whiche is bound about the body with this herbe, so much they hate the sauour therof.

And Palladius writeth, that if you bestrike or annoynte the plants and trées, with the red Oker, Tarre and Butter mixed togither, that the same driueth them away.

And certaine Greeke writers will, to annoynt the Plantes and trees with the gall of a Bull, the mather of Oyle, and Tar tempered togither, whiche so driueth them away. And they also wryte, that if you poure of the proper droppyng of the Poppie, myxed wyth Vyneger, into their hoales, that they after die.

Also some write, that you maye destroye the Pysmiers with

with the only sauour or stinke or smoke of the wilde Cubumber brent.

And certain wil, that if the Pismiers crép vpon your trées, to make brode round rings about the bodies and armes of the trées, with white chalke: For that by twice or thrice, or oftner so doing, you shall cause them to forsake the crèping vp anye more on those Trées. *That pismiers creepe not on your trees.*

And Plinie wryteth, that you may destroy the Pismiers, if that you stop their holes, eyther with Sea mud, or with ashes, if that they be not wet. And yet the herbe Heliotropion (which some suppose to be the Marigolde) by strawing the leaues on the holes, doe chiefly destroy them. And certaine write, that the water in whiche the vnbaked Tile hath bene soaked, poured vpon the holes, doth destroy them. And nowe these instructions against the Pismiers, shal here suffice. *A secrete of Plinie for the killing of Pismyers.*

And Democritus in his rules of husbandrie wryteth, that ẏ Gnattes which haunt and feed in Gardens, maye be driuen away, with the only burning and making of a smoke of ẏ herbe Calamynte.

And the sayde Democritus writeth, that the decoction of the herbe Organny in vineger, & sprinckled on them, doth likewise driue them away, as hath bene experienced. *Sundry remedies for ẏ driuing away of Gnattes.*

And the Gnattes also be chased away if that you steepe the herbe Rue, or herbe Grace in water, and sprinckle the same on the beds where they haunt. And they be also destroyed & chased away, with the smoke made of Galbanum, Brimstone, & Comin, mixed togither, and likewise chased awaye with the decoction of the Yearbe named Flebane, sprinckled on the beddes.

And certayne Grékes write, that the stalkes of Hempe flouring doe driue awaye the swarme, or huge companye of Gnattes: And the like doeth the smoake made of the Dre dung. *A sprinckle made of the hemp flouring to driue away Gnattes.*

And Palladius writeth, that the pouder of the rote of Elecampane, myxed with the ashes of hornes burned, and the same sprinckled on the beds, doth driue the Gnats away. And Plinie

wryteth, that a ſmoake made onely of the gumme named Galbanum doth driue awaye the Gnattes.

Certain practiſes of the Greekes, againſt the flyes with the long hinder legges.

And Byricius the Grecke writeth, that if you ſprinckle the place moſt ſwarming of thoſe flies, (with the long hinder legs) the ponder of Roſewort, Oripiment, and milke mixed togyther, that the ſame will either kill them, or driue them quite awaye, and the ſame Byritius writeth, that Alum with the hearb Organnie ſteeped in milke, and the ſame ſprinckled on the beds and hearbes, letteth them from touching thoſe hearbes after. And the Bay leaues or hearbes beaten to ponder, with the rote of the black Roſewort, & tempered either in milke, or in water and hony mixed togither, the ſame ſprinckled on ẏ herbs doth either ſlea them, or driue them quite awaye.

A ſecrete for the driuing away of thoſe flies.

And certaine Grekes write, that if you burne of thoſe flies in the middle of your Garden, that the ſauoure of them wyll driue away the reſt: and the like doth the wetting of ſome of them, and after couering them there with wette mudde.

And Byritius writeth that the flies with the long hinder legs will not after touche anye of thoſe hearbes, whych bee ſprinckled with the water, wherein the Leeke or Tentorie hath bin ſteyed.

Didimus practiſe againſt the Wreeſes.

And againſte the Wreeſes (whiche be flyes that eate the corne as it groweth) and doe beſydes muche harme to Hearbes, Didimus willeth to ſowe thee graynes or cornes of Muſkardſeede, neare to the rote of ſuch a Tree, and among the Hearbes eaten wyth them, whyche ſo dryueth them awaye. And againſt the Fielde and Garden mice, Apuleius wylleth to ſteepe youre Seedes before the ſowyng in an Ore or Cowes Gall. And certaine will, to ſtoppe theyr hoales with the leaues of Rhododaphnes, for that when they ſeeke to come forth & gnaw of thoſe leaues, they after die.

Remedies againſt the garden and field Mice.

And certaine Grekes will, to take the ponder made of the wilde Cucumber, Henbayne ſeedes, bitter Almondes, & black Roſewort, (of ech a like quantitie) and the ſame to worke togither with oyle: whych laid or put into the holes of ẏ Garde or field mice, driueth thē ſpeedily away. And Plinie writeth ẏ

the

the Garden mice may be driuen away, if you sprinckle the beds with the ashes of the Wesell, or with that water sprinckled on the beds, in which the Cat hath bin washed. And the sædes also (before the sowing) steeped in the gall of an Oxe, doeth driue them from the eating of the sædes at any time after.

And Florentine writeth, that the Snake or Adder will not lodge or abide in that Garden, where eyther Wormewodde, Mugworte, or Sothernwodde be aptly planted in the corners, or rounde aboute the Garden. And if they haunt any Garden, then with the smoake made of the drie Lillie rote, or Hartes horne, or of the hokes of the Goate, they maye spedilye bee driuen awaye. And Democritus writeth, that if you caste the greene Oken leaues, vppon either the Snake or Adder, that he dieth forthwith: or if any spitteth fasting into their mouth opened. And Florentine writeth, that neyther the Snake nor Adder wil come neare that place, where either ỳ fat of a Hart lyeth buryed, or the rote of Centorie, or the stone of Gagates, or the dung of a Kite lyeth.

How snakes and adders may be killed

And you maye driue away any venomous creeping thing, if that you take the pouder made of Nigella, Pellitorie, Galbanum, Hartes-horne, Brimstone, Peceudanum, and the hokes of the Goate, miryng all these togither by equall portions: and wrought togither with vineger, make little balles of the same, and with the same make a smoke, and it drieth all forthwith to forsake the ground vpon the savor thereof.

Howe anye place may be free from the Snake or Adder.

And they hate all strong savors, whiche bee either made with Garlike or Onion blades, and such like: and the flame of fyre also, which greatly dimmeth their sighte. And the Adders do likewise loue the Sauine tree, the Iuie tree, and the Fenell, as the Eeles do the Sage, and the Snake the herb Roket.

Under what the Adders & Snakes ioye to be.

And the Snakes and Adders (of all other thinges) doe moste hate the Ashe tree, for that they cannot abide the touching of ỳ long shadow in the morning, nor that in the euening, but run far from it. And Plinie writeth a maruellous matter of the Ash tree, for if a Snake (saith he) be compassed about with the greene Ashe tree leaues, and a fire made in the middest, that he

The naturall contrarietie of the Ashe & the snake or adder worthy to be noted.

wil rather run into the burning fire, than towards the leaues, so much he hateth the Ashe træ.

Of the ferne against snaks or adders.

And certaine write, that a smoake made of the drye Ferne burned, doeth dryue awaye Snakes and Adders oute of that grounde.

And Palladius writeth, that the Snake and Adders, and all other venomous vermine be driuen away with euery sharpe stinking sauour fumed abroade.

How Todes may be driuē awaye and killed.

And the Todes may be driuen away and killed (as write the Grækes and Latines) with those helps and remedies, whiche wee haue before taught, in the remedyes agaynste the Snakes and Adders: and therfore to recite those againe, were here superfluous.

Africanus practise for the driuing away and killing of the Backes.

And Africanus writeth, that the Backes will not flie vp and down in that Garden, where through the walkes and pathes you hang of the boughes or branches of the Plane træ. And they be also killed with the onely smoke made of Iuy branches in the alleis about.

And against the chirping of the frogs, which perhaps seeme to disquiet the Gardner in the Sommer nights, vse this helpe and secreat, written of the Græke Africanus, which willeth to set a bright lighte before them, or to hang a brighte Lanterne light on some træ, that the same light may shine on thē, like the light of the Sunne, which causeth them by the sight therof, to cease their chirping, as hath bin tried by sundry oftentimes.

Nowe (gentle Reader) I haue here vttered those speciall incommodities whiche happen in Gardens, vnto whiche I haue adioyned the most proued and true experiences, againste those euills, out of the best Authours, both of the olde and new wryters in this Arte: least that any (hauing delight in Gardning) shoulde be frustrate of these helpes. And thus an ende of this firste Booke.

(·)

The

¶ The ſecond Booke inſtructeth the diuerſe maner of ſowing, ſetting and ordering of the moſt pot-herbs, floures. &c. with *the care and ſecreates taught, aſwell for* the health of the body, as to the pleaſure and delight of the eye.

NOW that I haue ended my firſt booke, ſuche as it is: I minde here to enter into the ſeconde. In whiche ſhall be entreated of the diuerſe maner, care, ordering, & diligẽce to be beſtowed, both in the ſowing, ſetting, and remouing of the moſte pot-herbs, ſwéete ſmelling hearbes, and pleaſant floures, aſwell for the vſe of Phiſicke, as for pleaſure to carry in the hande, & otherwiſe to ſerue the Pot. And theſe, by diligence of the Author, gathered out of ẏ treaſurs of the beſt writers (of ẏ Gréeks & Latines) in this Art: and experienced by the oftẽ practiſes, of ſundry ſkilfull Gardners in diuers Realmes & Countreis, vnto our great vſe and commoditie. And ſuch worthie ſecreats alſo taught in theſe mattets, as the like hathe not bin vttered in the Engliſhe tongue. And for that I meane not to ſéeme long in rehersall of the benefite of theſe vnto mans health and delighte: I minde therefore (as the moſte number of writers doe) to entreate firſt of that wel knowne herbe, (both vnto the Citie and Country) named the Lettuce: whoſe nature, care, properties, and benefitte alſo to the health, ſhall after appeare.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecreats of the Lettuce. Cap. j.

AND firſte the Garden Lettuce (of whiche wée mynde here to entreate) doeth delighte to be ſowne in a fatte and well wrought grounde, being dunged before, and moyſte at the ſowing: for ſo it appeareth by the fourth day after the ſowing, ſo that

that the ſéedes bée not otherwiſe burnte, and the grounde vnfruitfull.

And it may alſo be ſowne all the yeare through, if ſo be the grounde bée well dunged and dreſſed, and the ſéedes often watered, for ſo they come the faſter and plentifuller vp. And thoſe Séedes whiche you ſowe in the Harueſt, may well be remoued and ſette againe in the moneth of December, and in beddes (if you will,) with other hearbes. For ſo it well abideth the colde Winter time, and is alſo much comforted thereby, for that it maye well agrée and come vppe wyth other hearbes, vnto the Séede time. And to make it ſpreade of breadth in the growing, you muſte then remoue eche from other, when as fiue leaues be ſprung vp, and ſet them a good ſpace aſunder, wherby they may ſpreade the larger. And the preſſing downe of them, muſt eſpecially be done in warme dayes, in lightly cutting the leaues about, & after laying the ſhardes of Tyles, or Tufts of earth, to preſſe them downe.

And leaſt the Lettuce ſhoulde growe harde, it oughte to bée often ſette, and plentifullye watered, for by that meanes the leaues will growe both tenderer and ſofter, ſo that the rootes before, be ſteped and couered with ſofte dung in the newe ſetting againe. And both Palladius and Columella write, that if throughe the Beds and rounde aboute them, be often ſtrewed the riuer or Sea ſande, that the leaues will ſo become white, if the leaues before be gathered and tyed vppe togither. And to make the Lettuce growe lowe by the grounde, and to be thicke and broade in the heade, you muſte then remoue and ſette them when as they be growen vp an handfull highe, and often clip the tops of the leaues round aboute, and in the newe ſetting againe, ſcrape faire the rootes of the Lettuce, and after dip them in ſofte and newe Cowe dung, and ſet them ſo in the grounde, whyche after the ſetting, often and plentifullye water, and in the growing vp alwaies kéepe vnder, by clipping the toppes of the leaues, and laying tyle ſhardes on the heades of them, for by that meanes they encreaſe into a breadth, and not to a height.

And

And they be alſo made the ſwéter in eating, if in the growing they be often remoued and ſet again, & that in the ſetting, as they beginne to growe vppe of ſome heigth, that then the leaues to be tyed vppe cloſe togither, and béeyng growen a little more in heigth, that then to preſſe them downe, by laying Tyle ſhardes, or ſome other thinges ſomewhat waightie on them. And to make them pleaſant of ſmell, take and putte the ſéedes within the ſwéte Cytrone Séede, and ſette them ſo in the grounde, or elſe ſteepe the ſéede (for certayne dayes) in eyther ſwéte or Roſewater. And here note, (that of this) the leaues become the tenderer, if the rootes before the ſetting againe, bée dipped in newe Cow dung, (as is aboueſaide) and watered often with running water, or for two dayes before the plucking the leaues cloſe bounde vp togither,

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

And now as touching the Phiſicke helpes of this hearbe, you ſhall fyrſte vnderſtand, that the ſame is colde and temperately moyſt in the ſeconde degree. And Aegineta writeth, that the Lettuce doth manifeſtly coole and moyſten, and prouoke ſleepe, and as it doth nouriſh like other pot hearbes, ſo doth it cauſe good bloude in man.

And yet the often eating rawe of this hearbe, doeth harme colde ſtomachs, and cauſeth dimneſſe of ſight, and therefore of them to bee oftner eaten ſodden, than rawe.

But the choleriche, may ſo ſafely eate them raw, as ſodden, and find commoditie to the body, by eating of them rawe. And the eating of them while they be yong, is more profytable to the ſtomache, and encreaſeth the milke in womens breaſts, but when the ſame is growen to be hard in the eating, then it is both dry and bitter, and throughe his heate, then the more opening, and yet doeth the eatyng then engender euill bloude, and ſo cauſeth harme to ſuch which often eate therof, as by hindring the ſight, & corrupting the matter of Sperme. And the eating of them whiles they be yong and tender, doth helpe an ague, ſo well ſodden as being eaten raw.

And ſodden with vineger, and a little Saffron putte to the ſame, dothe helpe both the ſtopping of the Liuer and milt. Alſo eaten rawe, or elſe ſodden, and being myxed with vineger and Sugar, doeth open the Liuer and Milte, cauſeth good bloud, and helpeth the tertian ague.

And the Lettuce ſodden and myxed wyth oyle Oliue, dothe heale the dropſy being eaten wyth meate. And a Plaiſter made of Lettuce,

with oyle Oliue, doth mightily aſſwage hote Impoſtumes.

And the ſeedes eaten of milch women in meate, doth both increaſe mylke, and amendeth the ſight.

Alſo the ſeedes dzunke in Wyne, doe pzocure ſleepe, and the ſeeds bzuſed and dzunke, doth ſtay the often imaginations of the luſt in the ſleepe, and abateth the courage therof. And it pzouoketh ſleep, if the ſeedes bzuſed and tempered with the mylke of a woman chylde, and the whyte of an Egge, be layde plaſterwyſe on all the fozehead and temples. And the powder of the ſeedes mixed with the mylke of a woman chylde, doe pzouoke and cauſe ſleepe. And the lyke the Seedes worke to hym which hath an ague: giuen him to dzinke with warme water.

And the ſeedes giuen in dzinke, doe foz the moſte parte, ſpeedily help the ſheading of nature. And he which dzinketh the iuyce of Lettuce faſting, ſhall not be dzunke that day.

And the Lettuce plucked vp by the roots, with the left hand before the ſunne ryſing, and the ſame layde vnder the couerings of the bed, the ſick body not knowing therof, doth after cauſe the perſon to ſleepe. And if fyue leaues, three, oz one leaf, be layd pziuily vnder the Wolſter of the ſicke body, but in ſuch ſozt, that the leafe oz leaues, plucked of nexte the ſtalke, be layde beneath, and vnder his feete, and the leaues plucked of from the top of it be layd vnder his head, then do they cauſe ſleepe, as is aboueſayd.

And the often eating of Lettuce, is both daungerous to ſuche women as be apt to conceiue with chylde, and ſuch as be with chylde (as the auncyent men wryte) they doe not onely cauſe barrennelle, but thoſe which then be with chylde, ſhall after be deliuered of chyldren farre vnlyke their Fathers, in that they ſhall be both raging in mynd and fooliſh in wytte. And therefoze the much vſe of them, is the lyke to be eſchewed of ſuch women, euen as they woulde from a furyous dogge oz Adder, whoſe byting they greatly feared. Alſo the very often eating of Lettuſe, doth greatly harme ſuch which be ſhozt wynded, Leumatick perſons, and ſuch which ſpit bloud. And although the very often eating of the raw oz ſodden Lettuſe, be no leſſe daungerous than the Yearbe Hemlocke, yet we maye often eate of them in the ſommer, rather as a medicyne, than foz any nouriſhment, as both to cole and moyſten the ſtomack. And the eating of them doth make men ſolubile, in that thzough the coldeneſſe and moyſteneſſe of them, they ſo cole and temper the exceſſiue heate of the Lyuer. And ſome wryte, that the eating of Lettuce at night after other meates, doth the better pzocure ſleepe that night following.

And as the maner of the pzeparation of the Letuce, (now in our time) is with vineger ſalt, and Oyle, whereby to cauſe a better appetite to the meat, than to be eaten, and both to temper the heate of the bloud, & mitigate the heat of the liuer & hart, and yet the often vſe on this wyſe, doth greatly hynder the increaſe of Sperme, as is aboueſayd.

Theſe hitherto, of the Phyſick helpes, and pzopertyes of the Garden Lettuce.

¶ The

¶ Of the ordering, care, and Secretes, both of the Endiue and Succory. Cap. ij.

AND lykt the Endiue and Succory haue a lyke ordring and dreſſing, ſauing that the Endiue better abydeth the coldnes of wynter.

And of this, in colde countryes it may be ſowne neareſt the ende of harueſt, and it will become whyte in the growing, if the ſame be ſprincled ouer with the ſande, and often watered, and that with the great ſhoures of rayne, it be after couered, (and waſhed) lying on the ſande, for that it delighteth in moyſture and loſe grounde.

And after that flower of the leaues be ſufficiently ſprong vp, then may the ſame be remoued, and ſet agayne in a well dunged place.

For there be ſome wryters, which will the rootes to be dipped in freſh Cow dung, before the ſetting agayne in the earth.

¶ The Phiſick helpes of Endiue.

Endiue cooleth and dryeth in the ſeconde degree. And the leaues & ſeedes be vſed in medicines, but the roote hath no property at all in Phiſick. And the greene leaues be profitable, but the dry leaues haue no vſe in medicines, for that they then worke nothing at all.

And Endiue comforteth the hart, in that it cooleth and delayeth the burning thereof, agaynſt the diſeaſes of the liuer, without harme, in that by nature, it hath ſuch a qualitie and property of it ſelf. And agaynſt that diſeaſe called the Kings euill, take the ſyrupe of the Endiue ſimplye, with the which mixe the water of the decoction of harts tougue, which giue to the pacient to drink, for it is a ſingular remedy.

And the iuyce of the leaues annoynted on burning puſhes, doth qualifye the heate of them.

And the herbe bruſed and layd playſterwyſe on hote impoſtumes doth mightily helpe.

And the herbe layde without on the ſyde, doth delay and ceaſe the heate of the liuer.

And if the greene herbe can not be had, then apply the ſeedes, laying them bruſed, on ſuch hote griefes, which greatly helpe.

And the Endiue may in lyke manner be eaten as the Lettuse, as eyther any way be eaten raw, or sodden with meat. And the Endiue sodden with vineger, doth bynde the belly. And bruised with vineger, and that layde on the left Pappe, doeth helpe the Cardiake passyon without doubt. And it helpeth the holy fyre, hote Impostumes, and hote swellinges, if the same be bruised and mixed with Cerusse and vineger, and so layde playsterwyse on such places. And the iuyce of it mixte with Vineger and Rose water, doth ease the payns of the head comming of heate: and the hearbe drunke with Wyne, doeth amende both the default and griefe of the Iuer and Bladder.

And in the spitting of blood, and the excesse of Sperme, it helpeth by drinking of it by two or three dayes togither. And all such partes which may be holpen by cooling, may with the iuyce of it, the Cerusse and vineger mixed togither, and so annoynted on those places, greatly auayle.

And the distilled water of Endiue drunk vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a certayn tyme, and that morning and Euening, doth help the straightnesse and stopping of the brest.

And in the same manner and quantity drunke, is profytable to women with chylde, for that it strengthneth them, and amendeth their senses, and the same water drunke morning and Euening, vnto the quantitie of four or fyue ounces at a tyme, doth help the plague, putting away the Kinges euill, and ceaseth thyrst, being more largely drunke of, and qualifyeth the burning of the Iuer.

And it helpeth agaynste the payne of the syde, and the pricking which is felt about the hart, if there be drunke three or fower ounces at a tyme, both morning and euening. These hitherto of the properties of Endiue.

¶ The Phisicke helpes of Succorie.

Succory is of a colde and drye qualitye, and somewhat more than the Endiue. But Aeginet. writeth, that it cooleth and dryeth in the fyrst degree, and hath the qualitie of bynding.

And nowe this hearbe sodden with Wyne, and eaten with meate, profyteth the stomach, and helpeth digestyon, and the flowers brooled with the Rootes, and layde playsterwyse on the Goute, doe forthwith ease the payne thereof. And this playster layde on the holye fire, doth delay the great heate thereof. And a potion made of the iuyce of Succorye, Endiue, and hartes tongue, mixed togither with Suger, and after boyled with a little water and vineger togither, and if any vse the same often tymes, it doth both helpe the stopping of the Iuer, and myltz: So that after the same be taken the purging pilles of Rubarbe and (after that) the same comforter, which they name the three Saunders prepared of the Apothecaries, and the iuyce of the Succory boiled, doth lose the belly, and helpeth the stomach, the Iuer, and the kidneis. And it putteth away the pestiler pushes, if linnen cloaths dipped in the water of it, be layde on those pushes, and the hearbe bruised

brused with the Roote, & of the same made flat rounde Cakes, which after being mixed and dissolued in Rose water annoynt any scabbed place therewith, and it will both heale, and make the skinne fayre after. And the flowers of Succory, cast amongest a heape of Pismyers or Antes, will soone after become so redde as blood. And the flower of Succory, gathered tymely in the morning, and after distilled in Balneo Mariæ doth helpe diuerse diseases of the eyes, as the pinne and web, the mist of the eyes hyndering the sight, the vlcers of the eyes, and many other diseases of the eyes.

These hitherto, of the properties of the Succorie.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearbe Blete. Ca. iij.

And syrst of the Blete, there be two kyndes, the one red or black, and the other whyte, for the red in the growing becommeth so red, both in the leaues and stalkes, as the scarlet in a manner, which after the longer growing, becommeth purple of colour, and in the ende vnto a black colour, through whiche the same of some is named the black Blete. And the whyte groweth lyke to the whyte Beetes, both in the stalkes & leaues, being vnsauorie, and byteth very little, or of a small sharpenes. And both kyndes doe well spring vp in a Garden, and that speedily.

And it may be sowne in any grounde, but the rather in a wel dressed ground, and after the same be well sprong vp, it needeth not after to be weeded or stoned.

And yet some wryte, that the Blete loyeth in a fatte ground being wel turned with dung, for so they say it will best prosper. And when they be sprong vp vnto their seeding, then they decay not after in that ground, for that they yearelye renue through the falling of the seedes: So that if a man would, he shal scarcely weede them out of his grounde, but that they will continue many yeres after, without any further trauayle. And Palladius thinketh it best to be sowne in March, and after it once prospereth, (after the sowing or setting) it neuer decayeth, as hee wryteth.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Blete which commonly men eate, is colde and moyst in the seconde degree. And now the same is sometymes eaten with eate, so that it, fyrst be sodden in water, and fryed with Oyle and butter, and after that seasoned with salt and Ginger, or Verjuyce, and then the eating of it in such sort doth little harme, if the same be not often vsed. For this by experience hath bene noted sundry tymes, that the often eating of it (although in such sorte prepared) doe cause vomiting, payne of the bowels and stomache, and the scouring of choller by fluxe. And a playster made of it with Oyle, and that layde on the place of the myte, doth helpe the greese thereof. And by eating of this herb as we haue aboue sayde, it doth loose the bellie of propertie, when as the same is become costiue or bound by any clammy matter. These hitherto of the properties of the Blete.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the herbe Spinage. Cap. iiij.

AND fyrst the Spinage is sowne very wel in the moneth of September and October, to serue both in the winter tyme and Lent following, in well dunged ground. And the Spinage also may be sowne alone in beds, the ground being fat and wel turned in with dung. And when the same is well come vp, then may you cut away the one halfe of the turfe at one tyme, and the other halfe at another tyme. For so the vertue and commodity of it will indure a long tyme.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

Spinage is colde and moyst in the ende of the fyrst degree, and the same sodden and eaten with meate, doth soften the hardnesse of the belly, and taketh away the paynes and greefes both of the brest and lunges. Also it nourisheth better then doth the Orach, as writeth Serapion, for that it doth qualify choller, clense the body, and strenghten the stomack, and the decoction of this herb drunk, expelleth euil humors, and causeth the easye drawing of breth. But the often and daily eating of it with meate, doth ingender Melancholy, like as the Lettuce doth. And whosoeuer shall haue grieuous paynes of the back, and a costiue belly, let them eate of this herbe sodden, and drinke of

supp

suppe of the broth, and they shall haue ease and remedye in shorte tyme by Gods helpe. And the hearb helpeth the payne of the throate, comming of bloud and red choler. These hitherto of the properties of the Spinage.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Orach, or Arage. Cap. v.

And first the hearb named Orach, or Arage, may be sowne from the beginning of the Spring, vnto Haruest: that is, from Februarye, Marche, Aprill, and all other monethes following, vnto Haruest. But of some it is sowne in the Moneth of December, in earth well trimmed and dunged, and the better it commeth vp, being thinne sowne. Also it muche delighteth to be often fed with plenty of moisture, and if the season be drye, then in continuall moysture. And the seedes of the Orach, may well be kept for sower yeares. But the seedes as soone as they be strawne or sowne abroade, muste bee couered with earth. And the weedes growne among the yong plantes, must be still an ende plucked vp by the rootes And it requyreth not to be remoued: yet the same groweth the better, if it be set thinne: and Palladius willeth it to be sowne in Aprill, and to be watered all hote monthes thorow vnto haruest, for that it ioyeth in continuall moysture.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

The hearbe named Orach or Arage, as wryteth Aegineta, doth moysten in the seconde degree, and cooleth in the fyrst, of the which cause it softneth the belly, & the seedes do clense, through which they profit the stopping of the lyuer, and helpe the Jaundise.

And the Arage brused and mixed wyth Hony, doth take awaye the payne of the Goute, if the same be layd playsterwyse on the greese.

And Macer affyrmeth the lyke, that the Hearbe brused and myxed with salte, nytre, hony, and vinger, & the same layd playsterwise on a hote gout, doth ease the raging paine therof: & the seedes of the Arage brused, and drunk with water and hony myxed togither, doth help the sheading of the gall. Like wyse the iuyce layd on the holy fire, and on any other inflamation, doth cease and qualify it. And this hearb applied vnto the womans priuie place, doth amend the euils within, and ceaseth forthwith the payn of the matrice: & sodden like vnto another

potte hearbe, and ſo eaten, doeth looſe the coſtiueneſſe of the bellye, proceeding of heate, and aſſwageth diuerſe ſwellinges and the hearb layd playſterwiſe on any member harmed either with thorn, ſplenter of wood, or nayle, doth after draw out the ſame without harme, and healeth the wounde. And this hearbe boyled with honye, and layde on rough nayles of the fingers, doth after looſe them without payne: and the ſeedes often drunke, doe helpe ſuch whiche ſtraightly fetche their wynde, and the ſame alſo drunke, doth expell wormes, and prouoketh vomiting. And the hearbe eaten doth help ſuch as haue a hote liuer. And if any eareth the hearbe Mercurie and Arrage, ſodden togither in the Porredge, which if he often eate of this porredge, it doth both loſe the belly, and taketh away the pinching payne of the Bladder. And if any often vſe to eate of Arage, hearbe Mercurie, & the Beetes ſodden togither, he ſhal be deliuered of the Ague in ſhort tyme after. Theſe hitherto of the hearbe Arage.

¶Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the Beetes. Cap. vj.

AND fyrſt the Bætes deſyre a fat earth, for ſo they beſt ioye: and the ſame which is eaten with meate, may be ſowne in the moneths of December, Januarye, Februarye, and Marche, yea and all the yeare through (in a manner) it maye be ſowen, if the ground before be well dreſſed, and turned in with dung. And when they be come vp thick togither, then may they be remoued, and ſet thinner aſunder, but rather they ought then to be remoued, when as foure or fyue leaues be ſprong vp, and at the ſetting agayne be dipped in new Cowdung, for by that meanes they grow whyte. And they delight alſo to be often remoued, and digged about, for ſo they proſper the better: and a man may ſowe them in that grounde, where Melons, Citrons, or Gourdes be, and when they be a little come vp, then to weede them often, that they maye appeare to growe alone. And thoſe Bætes which be ſowne for ſædes, be aptelt ſowne in the month of Auguſt, and remoued after in the Moneth of Januarye, in the furrowes or low places of the garden, for ſo they bring forth the better ſædes. And note that the Bætes bring forth no ſædes of any value in the fyrſte yeare, but better in the ſeconde yeare, and beſt in the thyrde yeare, which then ought to be reſerued, eyther to eate or otherwyſe. And the ſædes endure for fower yeares in good effect.

¶The

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Beetes is colde and moyſt in the thyrde degree, and ingendereth good bloud, and the whyte hath the propertie to purge and cleanſe all the euill humours of the body. And the head waſhed with the water, in which the whyte Beetes be ſodden, doth cleanſe the heade of the Dandrie, or that lyke to brenne on the head, and the often eating of this herbe is not good, for that it increaſeth euill humours, as well in the healthfull, as in the ſick perſons: and the herb is better commended ſodden than raw, for the ſtomach. And ſodden with Muſtard ſeede, doth helpe the diſeaſe of the ſpleene: and the iuyce of it, doeth qualifye the holy fyre. And the roote of the Beete ſodden, if of the ſame be dropped three or foure drops, hote into the eares, doth help the payne of them. And the iuyce of the Beete taken with the ſeedes of Cumine, or Dill, doth after put away the grypinges of the belly, and the iuyce drawne vp by the noſe, with the oyle of bitter Almõds, doth purge the head: and the iuyce rubbed on the gummes, doeth ceaſe the raging payne of the teeth. And this herbe profiteth by medicine for that it nouriſheth little, and by much eating of the Beete, it doth gnaw and torment the ſtomach: and the Beete groweth brode if before it be growne vp with a ſtake, there be layde ſome brode flate ſtone or tyle, to make it to grow into a bredth, through ỹ waight layde on it. And now thes be hetherto of the properties of the Beetes.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the Colewortes. Cap. vij.

And firſt, the Colewortes come vp in euery ayre, and may be ſowne or remoued all the yeare through, in which time the ground ſhall not be froſen, or ſo much dryed, that it cannot be digged or dreſſed. And the ſeedes alſo continue, and may be kept for foure yeares, and they alſo ioy in a meane fat ground, dunged and digged. But it abhorreth the ſtiffe claye, and gravelly grounde, and refuſeth alſo, the chalky and ſandie ground. And it ioyeth in dung ſtriked about the rote, & commeth well forwarde by weeding, (and the ſtronger it wareth) if it be well couered about with earth. And it delighteth both in colde, and rayne countries. And when fiue leaues be come vp, then maye it be remoued: but you muſt beſtryke the rote before, with ſofte Cowdung. And you may remoue it twyce, when as it is in the greateſt leaues, which ſo cauſeth it to growe the bigger,

and to yéld the more séeds. And if you can, let the same be done in a warme day, if it be in the wynter tyme, & toward the euening, if you doe the same in the Sommer. And those also which be sowne in December, Februarie, March, Aprill, and Maye, may serue all the Sommer and Wynter, vntill they be killed by long frosts, and ouermuch colde. And not onelye the yong Colewortes set in March or Aprill, but also those which be set in June July, and August, shall bee in Wynter great, so that they be set alone where nothing else is, & that in the growing, the heds or tops of the leaus be often clipped and cut of, which so letteth their growing into heigth, & maketh them grow into a broodenesse and thicknesse in the head. And the thinner they be set, the bigger they will be: and the thicker they be sette, the smaller they will be And therefore they must be set three foote asunder, the one from the other. Also beware that you couer the Colewortes well about with earth, in the new setting, for by lying bare of the earth, the plant soone after dyeth And now all these afore written, both in the ordring, dressing and nature of it, may lykewyse be vnderstanded of the Cabbage, to be ordred and vsed.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

Colewortes be colde and moyst in the seconde degree, although of Auicene thought to be cold and drye: and now agaynst the hardnes of making water, take of the Colewortes, whiche put into scaldyng water, and boyling them a little, so that they be halfe rawe, and after powring the water almost cleane from the, vnto which put a litle oile, salt, and cumine, and after heat the same togither, a little more & whē this broth is somewhat cold, then sup of the same, & eate lykewyse of the Colewortes (so soone as it hath fyrst sodden) & this daily do vntil you be thorowly holpen. And agaynst all swellings, & al biles, bruse the Colewortes which haue but yong and tender stalkes and leaues, those lay plaisterwyse on cankers, and it wil both purge & heale thē, which no other medecine of property doth, and yet before the same be layd on, the canker must be washed with warme water twyse a daye,

and

and the same yong Colewortes brused and layd on twyce a day, and with the same remedy also may be holpen lose and brused places, and boch vlcers & cankers on the paps, if the same be often applyed, and vsed, as is abouesaid. And if the vlcer be such, that it cannot abide the sharpenesse thereof, then may it be mingled with barly meale, and so layd plaisterwise on. And the raw Colewort eaten with the Hearbe Grace, or Rue, & the hearb Coliander shred togither, or a litle salt & barly meale with Oxunell mixed togither, and with the whole to annoynt the greeued place, doth ease the gowte, and helpe the ache of the ioynts in a short tyme. And for deafenes of the eares, bruse ẏ same hearbes with Wyne, and the iuyce pressed out, droppe warme into the eare, and the pacient shall fynd ease shortly after. And the Colewort sodden in pleasaunt wyne, and that drunk, bringeth downe the termes in women.

And the iuyce of the same hearbe mixed with the purest Hony, doth helpe certayne paynes of the eyes, if the same be dropped in the corners of them, And the iuyce drunk for xl. days with whyte wyne, doth cure both the Jaundise, and the disease of the milt, as hath bene experienced. And three partes of the iuyce of this hearb, & two parts of allume infused in viniger, and mixed togither, doth heale both ẏ foule scuruinesse and leapry, by anoynting therevpon. And the iuyce of the coleworts mixed with the meale of the Fenigreeke and vineger, and that layde playsterwyse, or annoynted on the gowt, aches of ẏ ioynts, and fylthy vlcers, doth ease, cleanse, and heale them.

And the iuyce also drawne vp by the nose, doth purge the head. And the iuyce of the colewort drunk with wyne, doth helpe the byte of an Adder, or snake: and the iuyce drunke with red wyne doth helpe the cough. and the iuyce taken with oyle, and holden a good while in the mouth, doth heale the blistering thereof. And the leaues of the Colewort eaten raw, doe make a person sleepe wel without dreaming, and the greene Stalkes and Roote of the Colewortc rosted vnder the hote imbers and tempered with olde barrowes greale (the same applyed in Playster forme) doth heale the continuall payns and stitches in the sydes.

And eaten raw with viniger, it doth helpe the diseased with the Splene, if the same be often vsed.

And Auicen wryteth, that eatē alone it doth ingēder troubled bloud and melancholy, and his nourishment is small, but the more and tenderer it is sodden with fat flesh, or Hennes flesh, the better and holesomer it is to be eaten.

And the fyrst broth of this hearbe eaten, doth soften the belly, & prouoketh vrine: but the eating of the substance, doth bynd the belly: & if you will make drye a moyst belly, then after the hearbe hath boiled a whyle, and that the first water be poured forth, poure in quickly the other seething water, & so boyle it new agayne, vntill it become very

ſoft and tender, and then eate of the ſubſtance thereof, ſeaſoned with pepper and ſalt, and ſo it byndeth the belly. But in eating the broth and ſubſtaunce togither it then worketh temperately, for the broth of the fyrſt ſeething Colewortes eaten alone, doeth looſe the belye, and the ſubſtaunce tenderly ſodden and eaten, doeth bynd the belly. And by this appeareth, that the broth of ꝑ fyrſt ſeething of this hearb, doth loſe the belye, and the broth of the latter ſeething doeth bynde the belly. And Plinie writeth, that the leaues of the Colewortes bruſed, and layde plaiſterwiſe, doe meruaylouſly heale the woundes of Dogges: and the Colewort tenderly ſodden, and giuen to yong children to eate, doth cauſe them the ſooner to go on foote: and if you wil drinke much at a feaſt or banquet, and not to be drunk, (and to ſuppe well and freſhly, at the Supper after) then eat before your going to Supper, raw Colewort leaues with vineger, ſo much as you will, and after you haue ſupped, then eate agayne foure or fyue rawe leaues, and they will after make you ſo freſh and hungry, as though you had nether drunke nor eaten any thing at your ſupper before.

And of this you may drinke ſo much wyne as you liſt, and not be ouercomed or drunke with wyne, yea, make great wagers vpon the ſame. And if any droppeth certayne drops of wyne into Colewortes, boyling faſt on the fyre, it forthwith cealeth (from boyling any more) and chaungeth the colour, euen as a dead thing in it ſelfe. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Colewortes.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the Lande Creſſes. Cap. viij.

AND the Lande Creſſes is an hearbe which the Germayns doe vſe in their Sallets, but it may not be eaten without the cooling hearbes, lyke as the Lettuce, Sorrell, & Purcelane, which doe ſo temper the fyery vertues, as Galen writeth. And now the Lande Creſſes may be ſowne with Lettuce, for it ſo ioyeth and commeth vp the better, and doth alſo delight in the often watring, and in a ſhadowie place, where the Sunne doth ſhyne little vpon, and hateth the dung. And Palladius willeth it to be ſowne in the moneth of Ianuary.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Land Creſſes, as writeth Platearius, is hote and dry in the fourth degree, and the ſeedes doe eſpecially ſerue vnto the vſe of medicine, and may well be kept for fyue yeares. And the greene hearbe alſo is of great effect, being dryed ſomewhat before the miniſtering of it: and now the ſeedes haue the properties of heating and drying vp ſuper-

fluous

ſuous humours, and worketh in a manner ſo much as doth the muſtarde ſeede: and alſo the ſeedes brused and drunke in Wyne, doeth expell the dead yongling, and drunke with Vineger, it deliuereth the ſwelling of the ſplene, and eaten with the beſt Hony, they do helpe the cough and open the breſt: and the ſeedes chawed, and holden in the mouth, doe helpe the Palſie of the tongue. And the Creſſes maye not be eaten alone, as we haue aboueſayde, for that it diminiſheth mans ſtrength, and ingendereth euill humours. Further, the ſeedes doe ſtaye the diſtilling or running of the head without harme, if they be taken whole, and the powder of the ſeedes drawne vp by the noſe doe purge the brayne, and helpe the payns of the head: and the ſeedes helpe the Palſie, if they be ſodden in wyne in a little linnen bagge, laid ſo hote on the paliſie place as may be ſuffered, and in the litharge or ſleepyng out of meaſure, let a ſneſe be made of the powder of the ſeedes, and blowne vp. And againſt the paynes of the hip, and payns of the cholliche, proceding of colde, boyle the ſeedes in a bag of wyne, and lay that hote vnto the greeued place, and the ſame diſeaſe, and the ſtrangury, the greene Hearbe ſodden in Wyne and Oyle together, and the ſame layd hote on the belly. And the Hearbe drunk with mintes in wyne, doth dryue forth both the long and flat wormes in Beaſtes. And againſt the hardneſſe of fetching of breth, & the cough, ſeeth the ſeedes of Origany in pleaſaunt wyne. And the iuyce of the hearbe annoynted doth ſtay the ſheading of the heares of the heade, and the iuyce of the hearbe dropped in the eare, doth helpe the ache and payne in the teeth. And the often eating of this hearbe in ſalets, doth gyue a ſharpeneſſe and readineſſe of wyt. Theſe hytherto of the propertye of the Land Creſſes.

¶ Of the ordring, care, and ſecretes of the Parcely. Cap ix.

AND fyrſt the Parcely ſæde being new, is long before the appearaunce aboue the earth, for that it appeareth not in forty or fyftie dayes after the ſowing, as wryteth Plinie. And yet the olde ſædes doe ſomer come vp. And nowe where the ſædes be ſowne, they doe plentifully come vp, and thicker together, and after they once proſper in that ground, they ſildome decay, but continually renue and increaſe in more plentie. And the ſædes alſo proſper, being ſowen ſo well in cold, as hote places, and in what earth you liſt, as wryteth Palladius. And yet it loueth to be continually watred, for that by the watring, it

wareth the stronger, and commeth vp the faster, and regardeth no ayre nor ground, and the seedes, as wryteth Columella, may be sowne neare to Ditches, or running Waters, or Welles. And if you will haue it grow big and haue large leaues, then as Florētius wryteth, take so many seeds of the Parcely as you can well holde betweene three of your fyngers, & tye them togither in a thinne linnen cloth, which after set in dung and earth mingled togither, and that put into a shallow hole, and it will after grow vp big and brode of leafe. And it will also grow of a maruelous bignes if after it be come vp, you dig vp the earth round about it, and strew the chaffe of Corne about the Roote, and water the same often.

And if you wil haue the leaues of the Parcely grow crisped, then before the sowing of them, stuffe a tenis bal with ẏ seedes, and beat the same well against the ground, whereby the seedes may so be a little brused, and then sow them in the ground, or when the Parcely is wel come vp, go ouer ẏ bed with a waighty roller, whereby it may so presse the leaues downe, or else treade the same downe with thy feete.

And Palladius wryteth, ẏ the male of this hearb hath blacker leaues and a shorter roote, but the female hearbe hath more crisped and harder leaues, a bigger stalke, and sharpe and hote in taste. And Palladius also willeth the seede of this herbe, to be sowne in the monthes of February, March, Aprill and Maye, and that thick togither, and to be often watred.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

Parcely of the gardē, is hote in the second degree, & dry in the third. And now the parcely hath the property of piersing, & of this prouoketh the vryne; and both the seedes and roote preuayle against the stone: also take the roote of the Parcely, which being drye, bruse well, and after drinke the same with pure wyne, and it wil cause a good braine, and good memory and purge the blood.

And the same drinke bringeth downe the termes of women, and the seedes eaten do take away the swelling of the stomack, help the dropsie, drye and pierce the euill humours, and consume them. Also they clense the liuer, and put away the paynes of the loynes and bladder.

And

And a ſallet made of Parcely, Sorrel, & vineger mixed togither, doth help the burning of the Ague and the herb giuen either raw or ſodden to eate, doth helpe the ſtopping of the bladder, prouoketh vrine, cleanſeth the kidneyes, and draweth downe the termes, looſeth the wynde of the body, taketh awaythe grypinges of the belly, and helpeth the ſwelling of the ſtomache, alſo the ſeedes be principall, the roote nexte, and the leaues be the thyrd in working.

And the Parcely layde in playſter fourme, with bread on that ſore, named the holy fyre, doth heale the ſame. And as well the leaues as rootes ſodden, do help the ſtraightneſſe of making water, and the diſeaſe of the kidneys. And Pliny wryteth, that the ſeedes bruſed & annoynted with the whyte of an Egge on the rayns, or ſodden in water, and ſo dronke, doth helpe the diſeaſe of the kidneyes. And the ſeedes giuen in whyte Wyne, doth help the Jaundiſe.

And neyther women in chylded, nor milch nourſes, nor women with chyld, may eate Parcely with their meates, for feare of hyndering of conception, dryng vp the milke in the breaſts, & cauſing the pongling to haue the falling ſickneſſe. And yet the Parcely throwne into fyſhe ponds, doth reuyue and ſtrengthen the ſick fiſhe.

And the chawing of the freſh & greene Parcely, doth cauſe a ſweete ſmelling breth, ſo that the chawing of this herbe, doth amend a foule ſtinking breath. And therefore is this herbe very commendable for women hauing a ſtrong breath, both to chaw and cary the herbe about them, that their ſtrong ſauour and ſmell of breth, may ſo be abated, and cauſed alſo to breathe forth a ſweeter breath. Theſe hitherto, of the propertyes of Parcely.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the Sperage. Cap. x.

And fyrſte the Sperages (after the mynde of the learned Grækes) ought to be ſowne in fatte and well dunged ground, in the ſpring tyme, and ſo manye Sædes ſowne togither, as you may well take vp with three of your fyngers, and that eche be ſet in little furrowes ſtraighte out, and lightly couered with earth. And Didimus wryteth, that the Sperages loy in a fatte and moyſt ground, and wel tu ned in with dung, and to be ſowne in the ſpring tyme, in furrowes thræ fyngers long, and that in eche to be ſowne two or thræ Graynes togither, and that halfe a foote aſunder. And that they næde no other diligence and care in fyrſt yeare, but onelye to rake and digge vp the wædes cleane from them. And after forty dayes, the ſmall Rotes will be ſo folded, and tyed one to another,

that

that they will ſéeme to be faſtned and ioyned altogither in one, and of this is named of the auncient Gardeners a Spunge.

And if the places ſhall be drye in which you purpoſe to ſowe the Séedes, then ſteepe the ſéedes in ſoft cowdung, layde in the bottome of the furrowes, euen as though they laye in ditches. And in very moyſt places the ſéede ought to be ſowne from the toppe of the ſyde, or ridge of the bedde, that the rayne maye ſo lightly ſlyde of, and not water to much in the falling off. And when the Séedes be thus ſowne, then the Sperages whyche grow vp in the fyrſt yeare, ought to be broken off, or cut away ſomewhat high, leaſt by breaking of to neare the earth, (the yong rootes being yet tender, you pluck vp the whole Spunge withall. And it muſt continue growing in one place for two yeares, and to be nouriſhed with the continuall dunging, and often wéeded.

And in the thyrde, and other yeares after, the Sperage may ſo open ẏ eyes of his branching, for vnles it be thus wrought, the ſtemmes broken off, will increaſe the eyes of the ſpunges, in ſuch ſorte, that the ſame will become as blynded, not ſuffering any Sperage after, to ſhoote or ſpring forth. And now that ſhall you keepe, out of whych you haue gathered your Séedes: and ſet the Spunges in the Wynter, in aſhes and dung tempered togither.

And there is another manner of ſetting the Sperages, by Spunges, which after two yeares growth, ought to be remoued, and ſette agayn into ſome open and wel dunged place. And that the furrowes be made a foote diſtaunt aſunder, and not aboue nyne fyngers déepe, in the which ſet the Spunges, that the earth lightly couered on them, they may eaſily ſpring vp.

And in the ſpring tyme when they begin to ſhoote vp, & ſhew aboue the ground, then with an yron forked dibble, the earth round about muſt be rayſed, that the ſhootes appearing, maye the eaſlyer come vp, and the roote loſed in the earth may grow the bigger, and after the growing vp, to be in ſuch ſort wéeded, that the rootes be not weakened, or to much loſed in the earth.

And in the Wynter throughe, the yong plantes of the Spe-

rages

rage muſt be couered ouer with a thicke and warme couer of ſtrawe, whereby to defende them from the ſharpe frоſtes, that might otherwiſe kill them.

And when the ſpring is come, and that they be further appeared, then to batten them with dung.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

Sperage doth heate and moyſten, and therefore helpeth the palſie, the kings euil, and the ſtrangurie. And nowe the fruite and ſedes be vſed in medycine, and endure foure yeare in full ſtrength. And the Sperage eaten with meate, doth helpe the ſtopping of the Liuer, and hardneſſe of the myte. And the roote ſodden in wyne, and drinking often therof, doth helpe the sheading of the Gaule without doubt. And if the mouth be waſhed with the decoction of the Sperage, it ceaſeth all the paynes both of the mouth and teeth. And profytable is the Sperage to be eaten for the ſtomach: and ioyned with Cumine ſedes, they then putte away the ſwellings of the ſtomache and paſſion of the Cholike.

And the eating of them, doe amende the ſyght, ſoften gentlye the belly, purge the breaſte, the boweis, and the raynes, and maketh a good ſauour in all the bodye, but the vrine then ſtincketh, and ſodden in wine, and the ſame drunke, doth helpe the paynes both of the kydneys and ioynes. And the roote drunke in white wine, doeth eaſe the payne of the ſtone.

And certaine do affirme the ſame profytable for women to drinke with white wine, for the griefe of their priuie place. And the roote ſodden in vineger, doth helpe the ſwelling and foule ſpottes of the ſkin, like vnto the Leaprie. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Sperage.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the Sauery. Cap. xj.

AND firſte the Sauerye maye be ſowen in roughe and leane grounde, and in the monethes of Februarye and December, eyther alone, or myrte among other hearbes. And this hearbe maye bee ſette in borders, eyther in ſlypes, or in the rwtes. And is muche vſed alſo in meates and brothes: and therfore it may yll be ſpared out of the Garden.

¶The Phisick helpes.

Sauery in qualitie is hotte and drye in the second degree: and thys hearbe eaten with creame, doth amende a colde stomacke by purging it, And if any drinketh of this hearbe, it helpeth and defendeth him frō fallyng into a sound, And taken in wine, it helpeth the stopping and other defaultes of the Liuer, the mylt, and the lungs, and clenseth also womens priuie places, but women with childe must refrayne both drinking and smelling vnto of this hearbe. And the hearbe sodden in wine, and layde on the Palsye members, doth after remoue ẏ griefe and payne of them, and the herbe brused and layde playsterwise on ẏ belly (as the seconde Plinie writeth) doth expell or send forth the dead yongling, & prouoketh vrine, and drunke in wine it doeth mightylye quicken suche, as be molested with the sleeping downe righte, so that their heades be often bathed with vineger, and the stomacke moued often to vomitte, eyther the poulder taken in an Egge, or the hearbe drunke in wine, doth stay the same.

And the herbe drunke, doth preuaile against the sting of venemous beastes.

And Dioscorides willetth, that the vse of the Sauerie in meates, doeth long preserue the body in health.

And Albumasar also writeth, that the propertie of this herbe is, to expell and put away windinesse, and both ẏ swellings and the grypings of the bodie, and helpeth digestion.

Likewyse, it expelleth ẏ superfluities of ẏ stomack, prouoketh vrine, & the monethly termes, & sharpnesse, besides the weaknesse of ẏ syght proceeded of euil moysture. These hitherto of the properties of Sauery.

¶Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the running Tyme, Cap. xij.

And first the running Time of the Garden, delighteth to be set either in the slippes, or sowne in the seedes, vnder the shadow of some hedge, or else to be set in beddes, on the edge of some pond or ditche, or pitte of water, for so it prospereth and springeth the faster, and runneth out at length.

¶The Phisick helpes.

The running Time is both hote and drie in the second degree, and doth so much heate, that it both prouoketh the monthly termes, and ẏ vrine, and is also very sharp in tast. And now the running Time doth stay the distillings of the head, proceeding of a colde stomack, by drinking thereof in wine. And drunke in wine, doth draw down the termes of women, and prouoketh vrine, and helpeth also the bit of venemous

beasts

beastes, and it ceaseth the headach, by boyling the herbe in Rose water, and so applying it to the heade, and especially the frensie persons, and such whych be moued to sleepe much, by the mixing of vineger to it, and so applying the same to the head, & the drinking of two drams wayght of the iuyce in vineger, do stay the bloudy vomitings. And the drinking of the seedes in wine, doth mightily prouoke the vrine, and expel the stone, and who that dayly drinketh of the herbe in wine, doth breake the stone of the bladder and kydnies. And the herbe healeth ỹ sting of a Bee, if the same be layde vpon it: and the hearbe sodden in wine with the iuyce of the sweete Lycorys, doth helpe both the cough, and purgeth the breast: and sodden in wine with Annis seedes, doth heate the stomacke, putteth away the wynde of the guttes, & helpeth the stranguric. And this hearbe sodden with vineger and honnye, and drinking thereof vnto the quantitie of a cupfull at a time, doth helpe the spitting of bloud. And the iuyce also of the herbe mixed with Vineger, and drinking thereof vnto the quantitie of foure drammes a tyme, doth the like aboue sayde. And the same sodden with wyne and honnye, if the same be applyed to (hote) in playsterforme, doth helpe ỹ disease called the Squince. And sodden in wine and drunke, doeth open the stoppings of the Liuer and Milt, and prouoketh vrine. And ỹ distilled water of the running Tyme drunke, vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, both morning and euening, doth strengthen & amende the heade, the braine and the stomack, and prouoketh the appetite to meate, putteth away the noyse or rumbling of the belly, softneth the hardnesse of the stomache, and prouoketh vrine. And the water in the same maner drunke, doth comforte the sight, consumeth the humors & distillations of the heade, & healeth also the one dare ague (or otherwise ỹ quotidian) mixed with wormewood water, & so drunk. And the drinking of the same water vnto ỹ quantitie of three ounces at a time, doth amend and helpe a cold Liuer and milt, and the Guts vlcerated. And the water doth open the stopping both of the Nosethrils and eares, restoreth the hearing, helpeth the gyddinesse of the heade, stayeth from vomyting, putteth away the gripings of the belly and bowels, also it breaketh the stone, and prouoketh vrine, by ỹ drinking therof. And to conclude, it healeth brused members, by applying often linnen clothes dipped in water. These hyther of the properties of the running Tyme.

¶ Of the Ordering, care, and secretes of the Lumbardie Louage. Cap. xiij.

AND first this herbe named the Lumbardie Louage, ioyeth to be sowen in a wel digged and dressed ground, but especially neare vnto a thicke hedge or wall, for that it so greatly delighteth, and best prospereth by growing in the shadow, & neere vnto some running water, And in such sort sowne, it will come vp in any ground.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Louage is hote and dꝛie in the ſecond degree, & the ſeedes may well be kept foꝛ thꝛee yeares. And nowe if any dꝛinke the ſeedes faſting in the moꝛning, they after purge that perſon both vpwarde and downewarde: and the ſeeds gyuen in gliſter, do eaſe that perſon payned with the goute in his feete. And the ſeedes ſteiped foꝛ a night in wine, and after dꝛunke, do ſende downe the womans termes, and yet the ſeedes be ouer ſtrong in woꝛking (taken inwardly) in that they bꝛeak vlcers, and open impoſtumes, being layde playſterwiſe vppon, and both in a foꝛceable manner expell the dead yongling. And therfoꝛe the foꝛce of theſe ſeedes in the miniſtring, ought to be tempered and mixed wyth the ſeedes of Fenel, and Annis, in a like waight of each vnto the Louage, foꝛ in ſuch ſoꝛte taken inward, it neuer harmeth no perſon: and in applying of the ſeedes without the bodie, there needeth no other thing to be added vnto them. And the herbe much pꝛofiteth in a bathe if the body be rubbed with them, foꝛ ſo it doeth open the pozes, and dꝛaweth foꝛth euil humours, in bathing. And the ſeedes ſodden either in wine oꝛ water, and dꝛunke, doe open the ſtopping of the Liuer and Mylte. And the ſeedes mixed with Cummine ſeedes, and bꝛuſed together, and dꝛunke in wine, doth pꝛofite much, foꝛ that they amende ỹ ſtomache, and putteth away the windineſſe of the bellie. And ỹ ſeedes bꝛuſed and ſodden in Wine, with Galingale and Synamon, doeth amende and helpe the paines oꝛ griefes, both of the Stomacke, milte, and Bowels. And the Tyzane made of the ſeedes, Sinamon, Rapohtike, and Galingale, with Sugar, and the ſame taken in wine, doe helpe the aboue ſayde diſeaſes. And the ſeedes dꝛunke in wine, doe ceaſe the payne of the Belly, put away the ſwellyng both of the ſtomacke and Bowelles, helpeth the byte of Snakes and Adders, and pꝛouoketh vꝛine, & the ſendyng down of the termes. And a bath made of this heaꝛb, the Saze, Roſemary, Mugwoꝛt, Calamint, Camomil, Melliote, Stœchados, and Fenigreeke, and theſe ſodden in wine togither, do helpe the Crampe, pꝛoceeding of the fulneſſe of the body, the Palſie, the paine of the Goute, and the kings euill: and the diſtilled water dꝛunke to the quantitie of two oꝛ thꝛee ounces at a time, helpeth the gꝛypings of the ſydes and ſtomache, the griefe of the ſtone, kidneyes and bladder, amendeth the hoꝛſeneſſe of ſpeech, and aſſuageth the daungerous ſwelling of the thꝛote, called the Squince. And to conclude, this water maketh the face both fayꝛe and cleare, if it be dayly waſhed (both moꝛning and euening) with this water. Theſe hitherto of the pꝛoperties of the Lumbardie Louage.

Of

¶ Of the ordering and care of the greater, or Garden Mallowes. Cap. xiiij.

AND the, greater, or Garden Mallowes, whiche beareth floures from the ſommer vnto winter, aſwell of the white, as red, is like in beautie vnto the Roſe, although not ſo ſtrong of ſauour, and ſweete of ſmell: whiche the women in our time vſe to decke their houſes and windowes with. And nowe thys Mallowes as Columalla writeth, loyeth to be in a fat ground, and hauing moiſt dung lying aboute it, and that it be remoued when as foure leaues be well ſprung vp. And this hearbe the Romanes in auntient time vſed to eate in their ſalets and pottage, in ſteade of other hearbes. And the floure alſo of thys hearbe (as writeth Columella) doeth both open at the full appearaunce of the Sunne, and ſhutteth againe at the ſetting of the Sunne. And to conclude, Palladius willeth the ſeeds of this hearbe, to be ſowen in the Moneth of Februarie.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

Garden Mallowes is moyſt, like to the other kindes of Mallows, and may very well be applied, as well to the outwarde as inwarde griefs. And nowe the hearbe, roote, or ſeedes, eyther ſodden in milke or wine, and dronke, do ceaſe a hote and drye coughe, heale the lungs bliſtered, and is a ſingular remedy againſt the Tiſick. And the Garden Mallows ſodden eyther in wine or water, and mixed with Hony and Allum, and the ſame holden and gargeled for a little ſeaſon in the mouth, doth both heale the bliſtrings of the mouth and throate, and other ſtinking ſores. And the Mallows ſodden and eaten, doth loſe the belly: and the ſame alſo preuayleth in Agues, vnto ſuch as be then bounde in the bodye. And of the ſame decoction maye be made a gliſter to loſe the belly. And the diſtilled water of the Roſes or floures of the greater Mallows, doth (of experience) heale the breakings out of the mouth, and preuaileth againſte al outward and inward heats, and healeth alſo the holy fire, and bliſters of the throate, and all other ſwellings, if the ſame be gargeled in the mouth and throate, & otherwyſe applyed wythout, by fyne linnen clothes dipped in the ſame. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the greater Mallowes.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes or the Fenell. Cap. xv.

AND firſt the Fennel (after the mind of later writers) ought to be ſowen in the beginning of the Spring, which with vs

is counted in the end of Februarie, and that in Sunnie places, and ſomewhat ſonie.

But after the minde of the auntient writers, it maye be ſowen in the moneths of December, Januarie, and Februarie: and at any time the ſame may be remoued. And nowe in oure time, the græne leaues of Fennell bée ſtrawed vnder Cakes & breade ſet in the Ouen, to giue a ſwéeter taſte and ſauour vnto the cruſte. Alſo the græne leaues be ſtuffed in Sea fiſh, to take away their Sea ſauour and ſmell in the eating, which the daintie mouthes can ſcarcely beare withall.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

Fennel is hote and drie in the ſecond degree, but Aegineta writeth, that the Fennell doth heate in the thirde degree, and dryeth, as it were in the firſt. Alſo the Seedes, the hearbe, the rinde, and the roote, be applyed in medicines. And nowe the ſeedes ought to be gathered in the beginning of September, and kepte for three yeres: alſo ſeeth the hearbe of the Fennell (and when you cannot get the hearbe) then vſe the ſeedes, which boyle in faire running or Conduit water, after drinke of the ſame a good glaſſe full euery day, which ſo taketh away the vnnaturall heate, & cauſeth a cleare ſight. And the whole roote of the Fennell may be plucked vp in the beginning of May, & kepte for three yeares. Further, if any woulde put away the red ſpottes of the face, which do repreſent a kind of leaprie, then let him take the Fennel finely bruſed, and mixe the ſame with olde Barrows greace, & after beat them a little more togither, which ſo done, thē annoint lightly the face with that ointment, whiche after doth make the face to be ſeemely againe, and taketh the ſpottes quite awaye. And the Fennel eaten of women (doeth of propertie) increaſe the milke in their breaſtes. And the Seedes eaten, doe prouoke vrine, and ſend down the termes. And the ſeedes eaten, doe helpe the ſtopping and hardeneſſe bothe of the Liuer, & milt, and the ſheading of the vrine, & the iuyce of the Fennell mixed with warme milke, and the ſame giuen to drinke vnto yong Babes, and ſucking children, helpeth the hardneſſe of fetching the breth. And both the rinde, and roote of the Fennell ſodden in wine, and drunke at the going to bed, and in the morning faſting, doeth helpe ſuche as be pained with the diſeaſe of the Stone, if the ſame ſickneſſe proceedeth of a hote cauſe: and the Fennell eaten doth comforte the ſtomacke, and helpeth digeſtion: and the like doth the pouder of the ſeede, eyther eaten or drunke. And the roote ſodden ſo long vntill the ſame be ſofte, and layde hote on womens pappes, beginning to impoſtumate, doeth heale them without harme to the patient. And the iuyce preſſed into a tinne potrenger, & the ſame ſet for .xv. daies in the Sun, whiche dropped into the eies,

eies doth in ſhort time after, clear & amend the dimneſſe of the ſight: & a little of the Aloes Hepaticke put to this iuyce, & the ſame ſet in the Sun fyue.xv.daies, whiche after drop into the eies, and it will greatly amend the ſight. And aboue all other waies with the iuyce (for the ſight) this eſpecially is moſt commended, that the iuyce be boyled betweene two diſhes on a chafing diſhe with coles, and that the water, which ſtandeth (like a deawe) on the vpper diſhe be poured (as the ſame alwayes riſeth) into a Glaſſe, & this doe ſo long vntill no more drops appeare in the vpper diſh, & after droppe of that water into the eies, & it will greatly amend and clеare the eies. And the iuyce of the Fennell tempered with honny, and dropped warme into the eares, doth ſlea the wormes increaſed & kept in them. And the roote with the licour ſodden againe with wine, and that drunke, doth help ſuch pained with the crampe, & healeth the dropſie. And the iuyce of ẏ leaues mixed with vineger, and annoynted on burning ſwellings, doeth aſſwage them. Theſe hitherto of the properties of Fennell.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the Annis. Cap. xvj.

AND firſt the Annis doth deſire a wel digged ground, & fat, and commeth very well vp (in other places) by dunging, & moiſture, and it is ſowne in the Moneths of Februarie, and March, by it ſelfe, and with other hearbs.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

The Annis is hote & drie in the thirde degree, & hath the vertue of conſuming and diſſoluing, & the ſeeds alſo may be kept for foure yeres in much efficacie & ſtrength, if they be hanged vp: and waſhing youre face in the diſtilled water of this hearb, it doth much cleare the ſame, ſo that this water be meaſurably vſed & with diſcretion, for that the often vſing of it, doth make the face yealowe, and againſt the black & blewe of a ſtrype, & eſpecially if the ſame be in the face, about ẏ eies, let the ſeedes with the Cummine be bruſed togither, and ẏ wrought with Ware, apply hote to the grieued place, and to the increaſing of milke in the breaſts, & of Sperme, the poulder of Annis either eaten or drunke, doth greatly helpe, and this onely is cauſed by opening ẏ paſſages of the milke and ſperme. And in what manner the Annis ſeedes be vſed, they do aſſwage the ſwellings, which both harden the bowels & grieue the ſtomache. And the eating of the ſeeds (any ſeaſo togither) doth both heate the Liuer, & helpeth digeſtion. And the Annis ſeeds ſodden in wine, & mixed with Cinamon & Maſticke, & that drunke, do mightily help the grieuous belchings proceeded of a cold ſtomache. And the Annis ſeedes ſodden in water, & drunke with the harts tong, do help the ſtopping both of the iuer & mylt. And ẏ ſame helpeth all kinds of the dropſie, & ſtayeth ẏ diſeaſe, called the Whits, in wome. And the poulder of the Annis ſeedes ſowen in a linnen bag, & boyled in wine, & after applyed hote vnto the womans priuie place, doeth bothe cleanſe hir bodye, and ſendeth down the termes.

And

And the seedes taken with Castorie, doe helpe the swelling, bothe of the stomache and bowells. And the Annis seedes bruised into pouder, and tempered with hony, Isope and vinegere, and boyled togither, whyche after by gargelling of the same in the throate, doth helpe that disease called the Squince. And the same prepared with Wine and drunke, doe helpe the impostumes of the stomache, and the coughe. And the Annis seeds either eaten or drunke with vineger and hony, do helpe the strangling or stopping of the matrice. These hitherto of the propertics of the Annis Seedes.

¶Of the ordering and care of the Cummine. Cap.xvij.

AND firste the Cummine, delighteth to be sowen in a fatte and well dressed grounde, and vnder a warme ayre, and eyther in the Moneth of Marche, or in the middle of the Spring the seedes ought to be sowne. And they do beste prosper, beeyng sowen among other hearbes. And some auntient Authoures wryte, that Seedes prosper the better, and growe the plentifuller, if they be sowen with cursed wordes.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Cummine is hote and drie in the third degree, as Aegineta wryteth, and the Seedes also may be kept for fiue yeares, and vsed in meats, drinkes, and sauces, for that they comforte and helpe digestion. And the wine of the decoction of Cummine Seeds, the drye figges, and of Fennell Seedes vsed togither, doe mittigate the paine and gripings of the great guttes, comming of windinesse. And the same wine also like ordered, doth preuayle against the cough comming of colde. And against the swelling of the cheekes, take the Cummine seedes, and figs, wel bruised togither, and after seeth them in Wine, whyche laye plaister-wise on the grieued place, and it doth helpe the same. And against the colde Reume of the head, take the pouder of the Cummine Seedes, and Bay berries, whiche heate togither in an earthen pot, and putting the same after into a little linnen bag, apply warme on the head, and this without doubt helpeth that griefe. And against the blacke and blewe of a stryppe, or in any other maner done, whiles the same is yet freshe and newe, you must take the fine pouder of the Cummine seedes, and worke the same wyth Ware at the fyre, and often applye that plaister warme, vnto the grieued place, whyche so vsed, is thoughte a sure and perfecte remedye. And the Cummine Seeds, sodden in wine wyth Fenegreeke, doe take awaye swellings, and the griping paine of the guttes. And the Seeds bruised and tempered

pered with the white of an egge, and that layde on the eye, doeth take away the rednesse of the same. And ẏ Cummine seeds boyled in wine, and that layde hote on the Nauell, doth ease the Strangurie, and all other passyons of the bladder. And the Cummine seeds sodden in water (if the face be washed with the same) doe cause the face to be clearer and fayrer, so that the same be nowe and then vsed, for the oftē & muche vsing of it doth make the face pale. And the Cummine seeds brused & boyled wyth vineger, and that applyed warme to the Nose-thrills, doth stay the muche bleeding at the nose, and womens excesse of the Reedes. These hitherto of the properties of the Cummine Seedes.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Coliander. Cap. xviij.

AND firste the Coliander ioyeth to be sowen in a fat ground (althoughe it will well ynough prosper) in a leane grounde. And the sēedes the elder they shall be (so that they be not vtterly decayed with age) the sooner and better they wil prosper & come vp, and they desire also to be often watered. And Palladius writeth, that the sēeds may be sowen from the middle of March to October.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The hearbe Coliander is sufficient common, and hath the vertue of cooling, as writeth Dioscorides, althoughe other write (as Vigonius) ẏ the Coliander is colde and drie, and others to be hote and drie. For by the effect it is knowne to be hote, in that it doth resolue windinesse, & wennes. And on the other side againe, the seedes shew it to be colde & drie, in that (after meate) eaten, they stay the vapours rising vp, that they ascende not vnto the heade. And nowe the seeds in receipts may well be vsed and kepte for two yeares. And the seedes haue the vertue of heiping digestion, and the paynes of the stomacke of windinesse, if the seedes be ministred in meate. And the wine of the decoction of Coliander drunke, doth the like. Also the poulder of the Seeds caste on meates, doe cause them digest the better. And Isidorus writeth, that the poulder of the seedes ministred in sweete wine, do cause men the proner to the veneriall acte, yet the same too muche vsed is euill, for that it bringeth men vnto a frensinesse, & raging with themselues. And the muche eating of the hearbe and seeds togither, is venomous to Dogges, and killeth them. And further, the confectes made of the Coliander Seeds with Sugar, do not onely strengthen the stomacke by vsing them, but represse the vapors ascending to the heade, & there-

foꝛe the rather to be vſed in meates of thoſe whiche be moleſted with the falling ſickeneſſe. Foꝛ the cauſe of this ſickneſſe, doeth pꝛoceede of the vapours whiche riſe from the ſtomache vnto the heade. And the ſeedes may not bee eaten rawe, but rather ſteyped in vineger, oꝛ couered ouer with Sugar. Foꝛ that the ſeedes either ſteyped in vineger, oꝛ couered with ſugar, beſoꝛe the eating, do ſtay the humoꝛs riſing frō the ſtomache vnto the head. And the Coliander ſeedes pꝛepared with vineger, and bꝛuſed, and after taken with the iuyce of the Plantaine, ſtayeth the great bleeding of the noſe. And Xenocrates wꝛyteth a marueilous matter, if ꝓ ſame be true, that if a woman eate but one graine of the ſeeds, that then hir courſes ſhal run foꝛ one day, if two graines, then two dayes togyther, if thꝛee graines, then thꝛee dayes togyther: & thus looke howe manye graynes, and ſo manye dayes following they ſhall continue. But the hearbe is foꝛbidden to be taken inwarde, foꝛ that it harmeth the heade and bloud. And the iuyce of the Coliander mixed with vineger, doe bothe coole and helpe the holy fyre. And the ſeedes a little bꝛuſed and giuen in raiſons to eate, doeth flea the woꝛmes in children. And the iuyce of the herbe, with the iuice of Lettuce, of Plantaine, the white of an egge, and Oyle of Roſes, al theſe laboured wel togither, and after laide on hote impoſtumes, and burning ſwelling, oꝛ bliſters, doe both aſſuage and heale them. Theſe hitherto of the Coliander.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the Muſtarde ſeedes. Cap. xix,

AND firſte the Muſtarde ſeeds ioy to be ſowen in a tilled & well laboured grounde, and rather on the ridge of furꝛowes, although they ſpꝛing in any grounde, and be nouriſhed in fine earth, like to poulder duſte. And the ſeedes muſt be raked ouer, whereby they may be couered in the ground. Foꝛ that they ioy in the naturall moiſture continuing in the earth. And the ſeedes whiche you pꝛepare to be eaten (in tranſpoſing the plants) they will ſo be ſtronger Alſo the ſeedes ſowen beſoꝛe and after winter, do deſire a fatte ground, and to be thinne ſowen, foꝛ ſo they come vp better than being thicke ſowen. And after the plantes be well ſpꝛung vp, they may be remoued and ſet againe.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

Muſtard ſeedes be hote & dꝛie, in the fourth degree, and the ſeedes only be kept foꝛ fiue yeares. And the ſeedes haue the vertue of diſſoluing, attracting, and extenuating. And againſte the palſie of the tong the

the seedes onely chewed and holden vnder the tong, do help the same. And againste the palsie of the other members, let the seedes be put into a little bag, and sodden in wine, layd on the gricued place: but especially in the beginning of the sickenesse. And the ponder of the seedes drawen vp by the nose, doeth prouoke sneesing, and purgeth the braine of superfluities. Also Plinie writeth, that the seedes doe extenuate and deminishe the clammy and grosse humours, and doe heale the stings of Serpents and Scorpions, being ministred wyth vineger. And the seedes do marueilously purge, breake the stone, cause an appetite, and comforte the stomacke. And the seedes brused with Enula Campana, and that layd on rype impostumes, do both breake and drawe them without paine. And the seedes gargelled wyth water and honny, do helpe the blistring of the mouthe and the Squince. And the seedes eaten with figs and Cummine mixed togither, do helpe the dropsye. And a like quantitie of the Mustarde seedes, Pellitorie, and Ginger, these mixed togither with rosed honny, washing the mouth therewyth and holding the same a good while in the mouth, do purge ỳ braine of such euil humors, whiche especially cause the grieuous aking and paine of the head. And the selfe same doth helpe the falling of the roote of the mouth, and the vicers in the throat. And to haue a cleare voice to sing, take the meale of the Mustard seeds, and worke the same with honny into little balles, of the whiche swallow one downe euery morning, & it shall cause you to haue a cleare voice in short time. And the chawing of ỳ Mustard seeds in the mouth, doth drawe down and purge the reume of the head. These hitherto of the Mustard seedes.

¶ Of the ordering and care, both of the Cheruill, and Caper. Cap. xx.

AND first the Cheruill desireth to be sowen in a fertile, moiste rye, and well dunged grounde. And to be sowe in the Moneth of Auguste, for so it serueth verye well all the winter thorowe. And the Capers ioy in a barren and leane grounde, they flourishe and beare their floure in the Sommer, and noy al other hearbs growing neare to them. And they also wyther and drye awaye, at the setting or going oute of sighte of the seauen starres.

¶ Of the orderiug, and care, of the hearbe Dill. Cap. xxj.

AND first the herb Dil, desireth the common earth of the garden, and to be sowen in the moneth of Februarie or March, and in the monethes also of September or October. And in

a gentle and holsome place, it may be sowen in the moneth of December, eyther by it selfe, or among other hearbes, and wel beareth or suffereth all conditions of weather. But it moste ioyeth in the warme weather, and to be thin sowen and watered, if they be not otherwise dewed and moistned with shoures. And some couer not the Seedes with earth, after the sowing, supposing, that the birds will not eate vp the seedes lying so bare.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Dill is hote and dry in the second degree, and the seedes may be kepte for three yeares, although they be the better, if yearely the seeds be renewed. And the seedes also be chiefly occupyed in medicine. And nowe the decoction of the hearbe and seedes, doth preuaile and helpe the straightnesse of pissyng, and increaseth milke in the breasts. And against the paine of the matrice, take a handfull of Dill, boylyng the same in Wyne, & after applying it in plaister forme vnto the grieued place, whiche so, doeth helpe the same. But Auicen wryteth, that the muche and often eating of Dill, doth weaken and make dimme ỹ sight, and yet if any vseth the hearbe, it procureth sleepe, and the rather if ỹ head be annointed with the Oyle of Dill. And the auntient phisitions write, but especially the learned Galen, that garlandes made of the greene hearbe, and worne on the head, procure sleepe. And the iuyce or oyle of Dill, dropped warme into ỹ eares, doth help the paine of them. And the Dill sodden with Poppy seedes, and that drunke, doeth staye vomiting. And the selfe same, stayeth the grypings, and winde of the belly. And the ashes of the Dill, doth help all the diseases of the fundament: and paine of the priuities, and it may profitably be annointed on moiste vlcers, and especially those (whiche Galen writeth,) to be ofte in the priuities. And the decoction of ỹ Dill in Wine, and that drunke, doeth helpe suche pained with the strangurye. And the Dill sodden with Sugar, and that mixed with Oile and Wine, and after drunke, doth helpe the matrice, sende downe the after burden, and draw down the termes, taking to the quantity of two drams at a time. And take of the Seedes of the Dill, and Nettles a like quantity, those beate into fine poulder, which mixe with water and honny, and after laye that plaister-wise on the pilles of the fundament, and it will heale them in shorte time. These hitherto of the herb Dill.

¶ Of

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes, of the hearbe Rue. Cap. xxij.

AND firste the Rue or herbe Grace desireth to be sowne in a sunnie place and drye, and in the month of march, and that the earth be myxt with ashes. And this herbe loveth to be sowē on high beddes, whereby the proper moysture maye shed therefro, as Palladius writeth. And the bare sædes also without huskes, may be strewed on the beds, and couered ouer with fine drye earth with a rake. And the yong plants sprong out of the sædes, being in the huskes, be the stronger, although they be longer in the appearing aboue the earth. And the yong plantes hate both moysture and dung, and rather loye in the dung of ashes, and may not well abide the colde of the winter, and therfore desireth to be couered on the beds with ashes, whereby the same maye the better defende them from the sharpnesse of the colde, throughe the heate thereof. And if they be sprinckled with water, then do they faster spring vp, as writeth Theophrastus, yet may not the plantes be moued with anye Iron, for feare of hindring their growth. And when the yong plants be somwhat come vp, then wæde them diligently, whereby the wædes hynder not their growth. And you may not only sowe the sæds, but set vp the slippes beyng slypped off from the greter stalkes, nere to the rootes, in the spring time, and in the moneth of August, & that the slyppes be wrythed at the ends, for so they spedily take roote in the earth. And the whole plant remoued, and set again, doth seldome prosper, but dieth after the newe setting, which the the slippes, broken off from the great stalkes, contrary do. And they prosper many yeres, without wythering any thing, so that a woman (hauing then hir termes) come not nygh nor handle the herbe, for that by handling, the hearbe doth by little and little wyther away and drye, as wryteth Columella. And some write, that the Rue set within the beane boared through and couered with earthe, doth so in the growing take awaye the strong smell of the herbe.

And both Plinie & Palladius write, that the Rue more ioyeth and the plentifuller groweth, by being set vnder the shadow of the fig tree. And of this Theophrastus iudgeth that to be ỳ best herbe Grace, which planted through the figge tree barcke is so couered with earth.

And the weeding also of this hearbe with bare handes whiles the dew yet hangeth on the leaues, doth cause daungerous blisters and soares.

And therfore if any by ignorance doth weed about these plats wout gloues on their hands, & that the handes be after infected both with an Itch & swelling, or blisters, then let the person annoynt his hands with Sallet oyle, or for the lacke of oyle, with the iuyce of the Hemlocke, and it wil heale them in short time.

And the iuyce of the hearbe Grace, sprinckled on Hennes, Cockes, Chickins, or any other Poultrey sitting on the rowste, or sprinckled in the poutry house, doth driue awaye Weasels, by the great smell of the herbe, for it is a special defence against such kinde of vermine. And to driue away eyther gnats or flyes out of your chamber, then take a greene branche of the hearbe grace (as Democritus writeth,) & with ỳ same sprinckle water rounde about your chãber. These for ỳ ordering of ỳ herbe grace.

¶ Thé Phisick helpes.

Herbe grace is hot and dry in the third degree, and both the leaues, and seedes may well be vsed in medicine. And the seedes also oughte to be gathered in the haruest, which may wel be kepte for fiue yeres, and the leaues dryed, for all poysons, and a peculiar triacle of ỳ pore, which not only the king Mithridates witnesseth, but verye experience doth dayly teach the same: yea both curious painters, and fyne grauers, do often eate of this herbe with their meate, for the clearing and amending of their sight. And the Rue eaten doth put away winde: and of this dulleth the desire vnto the veneriall act. And the leaues eaten with dry fygs and walnuts togither, is the surest remedye that may be, against any deadly poyson, if the same be taken in time. And another preseruatiue for the same, somewhat more costly, which is on this wise: take one ounce of the leaues of the Rue, halfe a ounce of figs, halfe an ounce of Iuniper beries, two ounces of walnuts, and foure ounces of vineger, all these mixe and labour togither, of the whyche swallowe downe a little fasting, and timely in the morning, and you shall

shall be defended that day from beyng poysoned: and it is also a precyous tryacle agaynst a pestilent ayre. And the herbe Grace sodden in vyneger, and drunke, putteth away belching. And the herbe sodden in wyne with fygs vnto the consumption of the halfe, and after drunk, doth mightily helpe the dropsie, the paynes also of the breastes, sydes, and loynes: yea, the same drunke doth helpe the cough, the diseases of ẏ Liuer, ẏ lungs, & the kydnies, so ẏ ther hang no ague on the patiēt. And the herbe sodden wyth oyle, & after cast vp in glister forme, doth put away the payne of ẏ womans places, & the swellings of the great gut. And the herbe brused with oyle, & that layd playsterwise on all ẏ priuie place vnto the fundamēt, doth help ẏ strangling of the priuity. And the herbe sodden with Isop & annis in wine, doth put away grypings, eyther drunk or fomented on the grieued place. And a playster made of ẏ herb with oyle, & layd on the nauil, doth slay the wormes of ẏ belly. And the eating of the herbe grace, doth amend & put away ẏ stincke of ẏ onyons, & Garlike. And the herbe grace helpeth those diseased with the ague, if the same be sodden in oyle oliue, and before the fit come, the body be annoynted with ẏ same, or else the same put (before the fit) in glisterwise. And the herbe sodden in oyle & dropped hot into ẏ eares, doth expel the wormes. And ẏ herbe sodden in wine with myrre, ẏ drunk, doth put away the water betwen ẏ skin & fleshe.

And the iuyce of the Rue, mixed with ẏ oyle of Roses, and vineger, & annoynting the head therwith, doth put away ẏ beating pain therof.

And ẏ herbe sodden in Fumitorie water, & drunk, doth helpe childrē diseased with small pockes. If the children hauing the mesels, be not alredy blinded with thē, hang thē about childrens necks, both ẏ roote of the Rue, and Scabiouse, and they shal be defended thereby, by Gods permission And an ointment made of the herb with oyle of Roses, ceruse, & vineger, doth heale any scab, ẏ holy fire, & running soares, and hot blisters. And ẏ herbe with garlike, salt, & walnuts mixed togither, & laid plaisterwise on the bit of a mad dog, or adder, doth heale ẏ same And against the weaknesse of sight, proceeded of a cholericke fumosity, drinke then of the wine wherin this herbe harh bene layd to soke in the vessel, for a while before. Also the herbe mixed with rose water, and ẏ layd on bleared eyes, do marueloustyclense & heale them. And against the toothache, take the herbe sodden in wine, & lay ẏ playsterwise on the grieued place. Or or this wise, take the stalke of the same herb, & burn the same somwhat in the fier, & with ẏ burne the hollownesse within the tooth. And against the coldnesse of the stomacke, and palsy of the other mēbers, drinke the decoction of thys herbe, with castory. And against the stopping of the liuer, the milt, the straigtnesse of making water, drinke the herb with the roote of the fennel sodden in wine togither, or the pouder of the roote of the Fennel wyth the iuyce of the herbe. And against the straightnesse also of making water, and bloudy Flixe, seeth the herbe in wine and oyle, and ẏ lay playsterwise on the roote of the yriuitie. And yong maried wyues maye seldome eate of thys herbe, for feare of hindring conception at any tyme.

And

And the perſon annoynted with the iuyce of this hearbe, or bearing the hearbe about him, ſhall not be bitten or ſtinged of any venemous woyme or beaſte. And laſt, the Rue of propertie, doth driue away all venemous beaſtes and woymes, out of that grounde, whiche is ſet about with that herbe, and of this the ſame is planted in gardes, nere to the beds of Sage, that the Tode ſhould not ſit vnder the ſage, vnder whiche (as ſome write) they delight to be. Theſe hytherto of the properties of the herbe grace.

¶ Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe Iſope. Cap xxiij.

And firſte the Iſope is a fruitefull plante, and neceſſarye in the Garden, which ought to be ſowen, or ſette in the ſlips and whole plants, neyther in a fat, nor dunged grounde, but in an open and ſunnie place: and after the hearbe is well ſprong vp, then maye it endure the froſtes, and ſnowe in the winter. And Palladius willeth the Iſope to be ſet in the whole plantes, in the moneth of Februarie. And in the Sommer when the hearbe beareth his floure, then cutte of the ſame and dryy it in the ſhadowe.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

The Iſope of qualitye is hote and dryue in the ſeconde degree: but Galen affirmeth that Iſopis hote and dryye in the thyrd degree, but the ſame is of the thynne partes. And when the ſame is to be vſed in medicine, then ought the leaues to be ſtripped from the ſtalkes caſt away as vnprofytable, but the leaues may wel be kept for a yeare.

And nowe the Iſope ſodden in ſpring water with figs, honnye, and Rue, and after dronke, doeth helpe thoſe diſeaſed in the Lungs: fetching the breath ſhort, an olde cough, proceeded through ỳ diſtillings from the head vnto the lower partes, and in the fetching of breathe (none otherwiſe) then by reaching the neche vpright, and ſlayeth all manner of woymes in the belly. And the iuyce of the hearbe dronke wyth Oximell, doth looſe a coſtiue belye, and the ſame iuyce taken wyth the ſeedes of Creſſes, doth gently looſe the belly, and cauſeth a cleare face, and good coulour of the ſkinne, if any dronketh thereof. And the herbe boyled with pure duckes greaſe, and figs, and that layd in playſter foyme on the mitre, doth take awaye the ſwelling thereof. And againſt the hardneſſe or ſwelling of the mitre, and the water betweene the ſkynne, boyle the herbe with figges and ſalt Niter, and lay

that

that plaſterwiſe on the grieued places. And the herb ſodden in wine, and dronke, doth cleanſe the breaſt. and the herbe ſodden in water, doth ſwage the ſwellyng of the gummes, by waſhing the mouth therewith. And the herbe ſodden in wyne wyth Fenel ſeedes, that wine dronke, doth take away both the paine of the ſtomache, and bowels: & a fomēt alſo made with ẏ herb ſodden & applyed to ẏ ſtomach, doeth ẏ lyke effect. And ẏ ſame foment applyed beneath doth purge, & cleanſe womēs places of the ſuperfluous humours. And in the diſeaſe of ẏ Squincie, the herb ſodden wyth figs, and that gargelled in the throte, doth greatly helpe. And the herbe ſodden in vineger, with the which ewaſhe the gummes and teeth, and it wyll ceaſe the ache and paine of them. And of the Iſope made a wyne, named Iſope wyne, whiche helpeth by drinking therof, the diſeaſes of the breaſte, the ſides, and the Lungs the ſhortneſſe of winde, and an olde cough. Alſo the ſame prouoketh vrine, and helpeth the gripings and nippings of the body, and ceaſeaſeth the colde ſhaking of a davive ague, and drawyth downe the termes. Theſe hytherto of the properties of the Iſope.

¶ Of the ordering, and care, of the Mintes, Cap. xxiiij.

AND firſt the Mintes maye be planted neare vnto a well, or other running water, for that the herb delighteth in a moiſt place, and to be ſet eyther in ſlippes, or in the whole rootes, and flouryſheth in the Sommer, but wythereth in the Winter. And this hearbe oughte to be ſet in a Sunny place, but in no verye fatte grounde, nor dunged: and this hearbe may not be moued after the growing with no Iron, as we haue afore taught. And this herbe once ſowne and prouing, doth continue many yeres after in the Garden. And Plinie wryteth, that the Myntes oughte to be ſette in the begynning of the moneth of March.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Mints in the Garden, is hote & dry in the ſecond degree, and all ẏ ſortes of the mints in the garden, do both comfort the ſtomache and help digeſtion. And now the Mints brought to pouder, and eaten in mylke, doth ſlea the wormes in the body. And the herb eaten doth loſe the belly, and the dayly vſing of this herbe doth giue a good coloure. And at any time eaten, is verye healthfull to the body. And the iuyce of the hearbe mixed with a little Brimſtone and vineger, and that annoynted on the hollye fire with a fether, doeth ceaſe the paine foorthwith.

And the Wintes ſodden with wine and dzunke, doth eaſe the paine of the kydneys, and bowels. And ſodden in wine and oyle, and that layd playſterwiſe on impoſtumes, doth diſſolue and cure them. And againſt the ſticking ſauour of the mouth, and rottenneſſe of the gummes, and teeth, let then the mouth and gummes be waſhed with vineger of the decoction of the garden Wintes, and after rubbed wyth the pouder of dzy Wintes, oz wyth dzy Wintes. And againſt the bzeaſt hardened by the curdyng of the Wylke, take a great handfull of the Wintes, and the ſame ſeeth in wyne and oyle, and after lay that playſterwyſe on ẏ paps, and it helpeth them. And further note, that when any medicine is giuen agaynſt the poyſon, the ſame ought to be miniſtred wyth the iuyce of Wyntes oz wyth wyne of the decoction of it, if you cã not get (at ẏ time) the iuyce. And againſt poyſon alſo ẏ only iuyce of ẏ Wintes oz wine of the decoction of it, oz the iuyce of it wyth honnye comẽ mixed togyther, doth helpe the ſame. Alſo the ſame helpeth the ſtopping of the Liuer and mylte, and the ways of the vzine pzoceedyng of a colde humoz, and of the hote, wythout an ague. And the iuyce miniſtred with honny, doth ſlea the wozmes in the belly, and it doth alſo kil wozmes, dzopped into the eares. And the Wintes put into Wylke, will not ſuffer the mylke to curde, although the ruen be put into it. And in the like ſozt, it doth hinder generation.
Theſe hytherto of the pzopertíes of garden Wyntes.

¶ Of the Ordering, and care of the Garden Tyme. Cap. xxv.

AND firſt the garden Tyme is a plant right pzofytable, whiche delighteth rather to be ſet in the whole plants, then ſown in the Sẽdes, in a leane and ſtony grounde, and that open in ẏ ſumme, but neyther in fat noz t unged ground. And Theophraſtus wzyteth, that it wyll well ynough pzoſper, if the plantes be ſet with the floures growing on them. And Palladius wziteth, that the beſte time foz the ſettyng of it, is in the latter ende of the Moneth of September, in a Sunnye place and Stonye grounde.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

The Garden Tyme is hotte and dzye in the thirde degree, and of this it doth pzouoke the vzine, and the termes in women, and purgeth alſo the bowels, by dzinking thereof in wine. And the Tyme ſodden wyth honny, and dzunke, doth helpe ſuch as ſtitch the winde ſhozte,

and

and helpeth in a manner all other griefes of the breaſte, by ſpitting forth the corrupte matter. And foure drammes of the fine pouder of the Tyme, taken with fiue ſponefull of the Oximel, doeth both purge choller, & cleanſe the bladder.

And if the belly ſwelleth, then take on dramme of the fyne pouder of the Time, with a ſponefull of Mellicrate, whiche drunke faſtyng, do eaſe the paine of the bowels & loynes. And to take away the winde of the breaſt, the ſides and flankes, drinke the quantity of three drams of the pouder, with a ſponefull of Oximell mixed together. Alſo three drammes of thys pouder mixed wyth a ſponefull of Oximell, doeth purge the melancholy humours, and dulneſſe of the ſenſes, proceeding of melãcholy, and the ſame potion alſo giueth the clearneſſe of ſight, and helpeth the paines of the eyes, if it be taken faſting. Alſo ỹ pouder helpeth ſuch grieuouſly pained with the goute, being gyuen with wine. And this time muſt be moderately vſed, for the muche eating of it doth greatly heate. And yet beware of the blacke Time, for that ỹ ſame doth corrupt, and engendereth choller: but vſe that only which beare a purple floure, hauing ſome whitneſſe withal. Thus much of the Garden Tyme.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the herbe Organie. Cap. xxvj.

AND firſte the Organy delighteth to be ſet in rough and ſtony places, and to be dunged and watered, vntil the ſame be wel faſtned in the earth. And it alſo delighteth in the like order of dreſſing as doth the Parcely.

And Palladius willeth the Organy to be ſet in the moneth of September, about the time of the entryng of the ſunne into the ſigne of Libra. And it oughte then to be gathered, when the ſame beareth floures, and to be dryed in the ſhadowe, for ſo the leaues and floures wyll continue for a yeare, if they before be ſtripped from the ſtalkes, and the ſtalkes caſte away.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Organye of the Garden is hotte and dryc in the thyrde degree: and the kyndes of Organy, haue the vertue of cutting aſunder, dryeing, drawing, and conſuming: yet the roote of anye of them hath no vertue in medicine.

And now the Organy helpeth that perſon diſeaſed in the lucr, by drinking the decoction of the floures.

and the roures and leaues put into a little linne bag, and the same boyled in wine, apply hot to the heade, the patient then couered with clothes to sweate, and this doth so dryue forth, and put awaye manye griefes of ẏ head & brest, & helpeth also ẏ straightnes of fetching breth. And the Organny sodden in wine, and drunke, doth help the stomach, and ease the bowels. And the same decoction layde on the belly, doth prouoke vrine. And thys decoction drunke warme, doth ease the grieuous payne in makyng of water, and the dropping of the vrine. And to helpe the disease (of going often to the stoole and doyng nothyng) take ẏ pouder of the Organy, and strew or sprinckle that on the fundament, & it wyll shortly after, loose ẏ belly, & moue the ordure forth.

And the herbe it selfe sodden in wine and oyle oliue, and the same stryked on a linnen cloth, & applying after to the womās priuy place, doth so take away ẏ hardnesse therof, & purgeth it & draweth down ẏ tearmes. And to heale a redde leapre, take the iuyce of the Organie, the iuyce of the Horehounde, a little wine, and the like of the Oyle of Henbane, yet more of them than of the iuyce, putting to them also a little Oyle of Tartar, which so done, mixe altogither, annoynting him selfe in the hote house before hys comming forth, & if that after hys commyng forth he shal be grieued wyth pain, then let him take Goats grease melted in a frying pan, wyth the which annoint the places agayn, & after lye down in a clean paire of sheetes, lying there so long vntil the same be dryed in, and after take & bruse the Organy, mixyng the same with wheaten bran, & heate that in a frying pan, and this being so hot as may be suffered, lay on the blisters & leapre, & binding a cloth vpon it, let it so lye vntil the same needs heating again, & this do so often, vntil ẏ pacient be healed, which ẏ same wil do without doubt.

And in the meane whyles let the patient eate such things whyche do ingender good bloud, and be of an easie digestion, or that easily digest: and dayly to drinke the syrupe of Fumetrie: and if the same happen in the wynter, then to drinke ẏ syrupe of Egrimonie in such sort. And further, the iuyce of Organy with womans milke dropped warm into the eares, doth ease the paine of them. And the herbe bruised with Roses, Calamus Aromaticus, and wormewood, and this applyed hot, doth send vp againe the fundament into the proper place. These hitherto of the properties of the Organy.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Violets. Cap. xxvij.

AND first the Violets (after the minde of Columella) oughte to be planted in beds a foote high, and the earth well laboured and turned in with dung, and that the plants be not aboue a yere old, and to be set in short furrowes a foote broade, in the beginning of the spring, or in the entraunce of the Moneth of March. And the sedes may be sowne in beddes two tymes of ẏ yeare, and firste in the spring time, and after in the harueste,

but

but the later sowing prospereth the worse with vs, through the colde season following And the Violets ought in the like sorte to be weeded, and the olde withered leaues cut away, and watered (when neede so requireth) as you doe the other potherbes, in the comming vp. And to haue one plante of the Violets, to bring forth sundrie colours together, take ẏ leaues of al ẏ colors of Violets, and putte them togyther into a thin worne linnen cloth, and after set them into a well dunged & laboured grounde, as before was taught. And this of an often experience, hathe bin founde true, that vnlesse the fairest Violet be remoued, it wil bear both a smaller floure, and a lesser of smell, than it did in the yeare before.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Violets be colde in the ende of the second degree, and the Violets ought especially to be gathered in the moneth of March, and dryed in a shadowie place of the ayre. And there be also three kindes of the, whiche be vsed in medicine, as the white, the blacke, and the pealowe. And nowe the floures drunke, do take away the windinesse of the stomache. And the decoction of the flowers, gargeled in the throate, doe helpe that disease named the Squincie. And the iuice of the hearbe doeth putte awaye any swelling proceeding of a hote cause. And two drammes of the pouider of the seedes drunke in wine, do draw downe the termes of women. And the roote sodden in wine, and laide on the swollen milte, do put away swelling, and dryeth vp the humour. And the roote sodden in wine, and laide plaister-wise on the hote goute, doth ease the paine. And the white Violets boyled, and laide in plaister forme vnto the belly of the woman, do send forth the dead yongling, and put away the swellings of the priue place. And if a foment of them be applyed to the nether part vpwarde, do mundifie the priuy place, and draw down the termes. And the Violets applied, do cease the paines of the head (proceeding of an vntemperate hotenesse) cause sleepe, soften and make ease the breast and throate, helpe the pallat of the mouth fallen, and the Squincie. But the syrup of the Violets, do especialye worke these aboue saide. And the only smell of the floures, do take away the headache. And the rootes boyled with Vineger and drunke, & the same annointed on the Splene, doeth asswage the swelling, and (easeth likewise) the Goute. And the hearbe with the roote boyled and applyed to children, doth helpe their coughe.

And the oile of ẏ Violets, doth heale many diseases, as first dropped into the eares, doeth put away the griefs of them, & taketh awaye the headache by annoynting the heade therewith. And the same Oile

myxed with wozm-seedes, and annointing the belly therewith, doeth expell and sende forth the wormes. And the syrup againe of the Violets, doth helpe the burning of the Ague, looseth the belye, and qualifieth a hote Lyuer. And the purple violets drunke in water, doe loose the belly, qualifie choller, help inflamations, cease thirst, and put away the Jaundise, and the same doth the conserue of violets. These hitherto of the Violet.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of all the Roses. Cap. xxviij.

AND for that the Roses be pleasant ornaments in a Garde, and so necessarie (all the kinds) in medicine, therefore wee minde here largely to write both of the sowing and setting of al the kinds. And now all the kindes of Roses may not be sette, eyther in fatte or clayie grounde, nor moiste or wette earth, but in a fine earth, and dunged with store of drie rubbish, & to be set in short slippes, (of a foote long) and in very short furrowes. And to be sowen in the seedes, they come slowly vp.

And here note, that you may not thinke those to be the seeds of the Rose, which growe in the middle of the floure, in colour like vnto golde, but that the seeds be in that part, whiche resembleth the forme of a small peare, in the vpper ende of the stalke, on whiche the leaues of the floure sticke. And nowe the seedes are then rype to be gathered, when as the grapes (with vs) be full ripe, whiche ripenesse of them is well known, both by their fuskish and brownish colour, & by their softnesse in the feeling. And further the beds of the Roses, must be highe caste vp, and euerye yeare pruned and cutte aslope in the tops, whiche you ought especially to doe in the moneth of Marche, having youre ground thē in a readinesse, and the day faire. And ordering your beds after this manner yearely, they wil continue many yeares: And when they ware olde, then digge vp the earth about them, and prune them in like sorte as before is taught, as by cutting from them all the withered stalkes, and deade braunches, and repayring the emptie places with newe slippes, after the mind of Palladius. And some wil, that the olde plants with their rots be digged vp, cutte a span long, to be new set againe. And other

will

will the yong ſprings with their rootes, to be ſet againe a foote vnder, and to be dunged and often watered. And if you haue not ſufficient plantes, to ſet out youre beds, then betweene the olde plants, ſette yong ſprings, ſlipped off from the olde, and the olde ſet againe with the rootes and all, and that a foote aſunder, eche from the other, well dunged and often watered, for ſo they growe the plentifuller and faſter.

And at the end of euery yeare, newe ſette them againe, and prune or cut away ye ſuperfluous branches, at the ſetting of eche roote, and digge alſo freſhe earth often aboute them, for in that they ioye. And the Roſes will ſmell the ſweeter, if they be gathered in fayre and drie daies. And to haue your Roſes ſoner than any other, and pleaſanter of ſmel, make little gutters two handbredth from the rootes, and powre warme water morning and euening, into the gutters, whiche ſo throughe the heate doeth greatly comforte the plants, and maketh them growe the faſter.

Alſo Didimus writeth, that if you ſet Garlike heades here & there among your Roſes, they will ſmell farre pleaſanter, throughe the continuall heate ſent from them. And here note, that the maner of the watering aboueſaid ought not to be done before ye cups, or very yong buds appeare, & then (daily after) to water vnto the gathering.

And to haue beſides Roſes euerye Moneth, you muſte then (as Didimus writeth) newe plant, dung and water them often euerye moneth. But to haue Roſes monthly, cannot be poſſible, neyther in oure Countrey of Englande, nor in any other countrey, lying vnder the North, ſo well as in the temperate and warme Countries. And this note, that thoſe Roſes which growe in a drie ground, be far ſweeter than thoſe growing in a wette grounde.

And to haue timely Roſes, ſift thē your earth through a ſiue, and that earth mire with dung, and put the ſame into an earthē pot, whyche after moiſten a little, ſetting the ſame abroade in ſunny and warme daies, or letting ſmall and fine raine fall vpon it, and at the ſetting of the Sunne, take in the pot alwaies:

and

and this so long doe (and watering it the whiles) vntill the Winter and colde weather be paste.

And after this, when a fayre day commeth, then set the pot into the earth, couering it ouer and about the plants with fresh earth, and doe afterwarde, as aboue is taught, and you shall so haue timely roses. and to kæpe Roses al the yeare, then as Didimus teacheth, take the græne Barly, being yet as graise, (and not eared) with the rootes, and all those put into an earthen pot not glased, or rather vnnealed, into whiche, put your budded nothing opened, and diligently couer them about with this græne Barley, and you shall kæpe them freshe and græne so long as you list (couering the mouth of the pot close) euen as thoughe they grewe still in beddes on their stalkes. And others strawe the græne Barley on the pauement or harde flowre, and in the blades they bury or hide the buddes. Also other take the young buddes a little opened, at the setting of the Sun, and in no wise touching them with handes, but properly gather them with a sharpe knife, and those lay on a drie bourd, letting them be abrode all the night throughe, if the night be faire, after haue in a readinesse your newe earthen pot well glased bothe within & without, but some thinke it the better (if not nealed at all) but whether way lyke you best, that vse.

And after this I saye, put in your Roses before the Sunne be vp in the morning, and stop close your pot with claye, mixed with horse dung and flockes, that no ayre breathe out at the mouth of the pot, whiche so done, then sette the potte into a bed of sande, and couering it well ouer with the same drie sande, letting no moyste place be neare to, or about the same. And on this wise, and by that other meanes afore taught, you maye haue freshe Roses al the yeare through.

And here note, that Roses and other flowres, dryed either in the Sunne or Ouen, do longer and better retaine their strength, sauour, and colour, than being dryed in the shadowe, so that the same be done with discretion. And the like may be thoughte to be done, with the swæte and smelling Roses.

And as touching that waye of making the white Roses to be

red,

red, and the red Roses to be white, and so partie colours, with other preatie conclusions besides of the Rose, you shal further reade and vnderstande in my little treatise, entituled, Natural and Artificiall conclusions where I largely write of these, and many other right pleasant conclusions, to be read and vnderstanded of the common sorte.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The Rose is colde and drye in the seconde degree and nowe when the red Roses be not fully opened, then they must be clipped of, and dryed in the Sunne. And the Rosed honny eaten, doth profite much, for that the same doth both comforte the bloude and stomache. And the iuyce of the Roses sodden in wine, doth take away the payne of the heade, and helpeth the eyes. And the gummes washed with the same, doth put away the paine of them. And the leaues of the Roses dryed and laide on inflamations, doth draw forth the heate. And the seedes of the Roses beaten to pouder, doeth erase the paine of the teeth, by rubbing the gummes and teeth with the same pouder. And the heads, (in whyche the seedes be) sodden and drunke, do loose the belly, and helpe the spitting of bloud. And the Roses mixed with honny & sugar, and that eaten, do drie vp the cruil humors of the stomack. And the leaues of the Roses sodden in wine, and giuen to drink, doth help such griefs as commonly happen in womens priuie places. And the freshe or new Rose leaues, mixed togither with honny, doe aptly purge mans body. And to make an especiall Laxatiue, take two ounces of the iuyce of the Roses, & mixe the same with the whey made of cows milke, and a little Spicknarde. And you maye also take the whey of milke, putting thereto twelue ounces of the Rose leaues, & a little hony, and this doth marueilous well loose and purge the belly. And syrup of Roses onely (being made of freshe Roses) doth loose and purge the belly. And the Rose leaues wrought togither with honny and sugar, do both comforte and purge the body. And that vineger is right profitable, in whyche the Roses be infused or steped for a nighte, to annoint or strike on hote members, or places of the bodye. And to a hote stomache the same applied outward, doth gently help, and qualifieth the hote burning therein. And the iuyce of the Roses, drunke with sweete Conduite water, doth bothe loose the body, purgeth the bloude, and especially choller, and putteth away the Kyngs euill. And the iuyce of Roses onelye taken, doth put awaye a greate burning without daunger, and bringeth a man (after the purging of his body) vnto a quiet reste. And the Roses do comforte the hearte, and recoyce the bloud. And the rosed hony doe both comforte and expell the melancholy and flegmaticke matter, and giuen in that water in which Fennell seedes is sodden, doth purge the better, if the same shall be mixed with a little salte. And the beste making of the Drie of Roses is on this wise, first clip off the Rose leaues from the whites,

& boyling the same in oyle Oliue, then sun the same in a glasse for 50. daies, & this is the best approued oyle. And now this oile applyed to a hote Liuer, doth greatly help. And this oile annoynted about the temples, doth take away the aking or beating paines of the head, & cooleth it. And the Rose leaues vsed in meates, doeth asswage bothe the heate of the stomake & lyuer. And the pouder of the Rose leaues brused with vineger, & mixed with the white of an egge, doth effectuously heale the paine of the eies, restraineth the humors, & the sheeding of bloud into the vaines of the eies, if the same be applyed plaisterwise on the temples. And the same called sugar Roset, hath the vertue of cōforting & staying, & helpeth the bloudy flixe, the cholerike vomiting, the faintnesse of body, & the Cardiacke passion. And the deaw fallen on Rose leaues, & gathered into a cleane quill, whiche drop on the neather eie lid, & it will amend the blearednesse of the eies. And the drie rose leaues boyled in wine & drunke, doth amend the paines of the heade, the eies, the eares & the gums: & the same caste in glister forme, doth helpe the corruptions both of the bowels, & womens priuie place. And the red rose water drawn in Balneo Mariæ hath manye goodly effects. And first ẏ same water drunke, doth strengthen & coole the braine, ẏ hart, the stomacke, & al the inner members, strengthen ẏ spirits & naturall heate, & preserueth from rottennesse. Also take one ounce of this water, white wine a little quantitie, of Tutia one dram, to which ad of Aloes Hepatike, & of sugar Candie, of ech. xx. graines, these mixe al togither, which after drop as neede requireth into the eies, for it doth clense, drie, and strengthen the sight and the eies. And the same water dropped with a little sugar into the eyes, doeth helpe the exulceration and rednesse of the eyes, proceedyng of heate. And drunke fasting vnto the quantitie of three ounces, doth comforte the heade: and mixed with wine, and then drunke vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces, doth take away the giddinesse of the heade, and strengthneth the lyuer. These hitherto of the properties of the Roses,

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the hearbe Basill. Cap. xxix.

And first ẏ Basill for his excellent smell and sauor, hath bin gretly counted vpon in ancient time, insomuch that kings, and princes, for the great delight which they conceyued in the herbe, did plant the same in their Gardens. And now the time of sowing this hearbe, after the minde of Columella, oughte to be done, in the beginning of the Moneth of May, in fatte earth, & when the seedes be sowen and couered with earth, then to be pressed down wt a roller, or diligently trode down with ẏ foote. For if the Gardner shal leaue the seeds vntrodden down,

that

that they did so ly hollow in the earth, that then the seeds wold putrifie, & come to no proofe. And Theophrastus writeth a meruellous matter of the Basill, that if the seedes be sowen with cursed words, like as men commonly do in the sowing of Hēpseede, that then they wil come vp the better, and the sooner. And the sooner also the seedes breake & come vp, if after the sowing, they be daily sprinckled with warme water. And some will the seedes to be sprinckled with vineger, if towarde the winter the seeds be sowen, for that with the sprinckling then of it, they sooner spring vp. And Plinie willeth the Basill to be watered onelye at noone time of the daye, whereas all other hearbes be watered morning and euening with colde water. And when the Basill is come vp an handfull highe, then to be cut off so righte or straight as is possible, althoughe it be forbidden in the like sorte, to touche it with yron, as the hearbe Grace, Mints, and Sauerie. And Gargilius Martialis writeth a meruellous matter, & worthy to be noted, that the Basill sometimes bringeth forth purple floures, sometimes white, and sometimes redde of colour, like to the Rose. And Crisippus once grieuouslye blamed that Basill, as writeth Plinie, affirming the hearbe to bee vnprofitable vnto the stomacke, the vrine, the clearenesse of the eies, besides to cause frensinesse, the forgetfull sleepinesse, and stoppings, or corruptions of the Liuer, and for this he thought it best to be eschewed both of men & goats And the Greeke writers thinke the Basil so disagreeing & contrarie to women, that if the whole Basill with the roote be put secretly vnder the dishe of meate set on the table (the woman not knowing therof) that she shal not after taste of the meate, so long as the hearb there lyeth. And Diodorus writeth, that the muche eating of Basill doth engender the abundaunce of lice.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

For the temperament and qualitie of the Basill authors do not agree, for Auicen writeth, ẏ it is hote and drie in the second degree, but Galen and Aegineta write, that the Basill is heating in the seconde degree

gree. and that it hath a certeine excrement moisture, for the whyche cause it is thought daungerous to receiue inwarde, but outwarde to be annointed, it doth put awaye and digest. And nowe the smelling vnto the Basill, doth comfort the brayne, and yet the smell of it doth greatly harme a weake braine And the seedes ought to be gathered in the moneth of July, for then they be beste. And the leaues sodden & drunke, doth take away the swimmyng of the heade. And the lyke doth the hearbe preuaile, if it be stieped for a night in wine, and after drunke. And the hearbe sodden in wine, doth cause it to be pleasante of smell, and heateth a colde stomacke, and helpeth digestion. And the poulder of the hearb drunke with the iuyce of Sloes for eight daies togither, doth helpe an outward rupture. And the decoction of thys hearbe in water, and that the same be applied like a foment aboute the priuie place, doth both cienle the matrice, and drawe downe the termes. And the iuyce of Basil drunke of women in trauaile of child, doeth not onely moue forwarde the birth, but cienseth them after byrthe. And the hearbe sodden in wine and oyle, and applyed to the fundament, doth cease the often desire vnto the stoole. And the hearb boiled in raine water, and drunke with a little poulder of the iuyce of Sloes, doth helpe the flixe of the belly, proceeding of colde. And the seedes drawne vp by the nosethrilles, prouoke snesing, and the seeds also mixed with Shoomakers blacke, doth take awaye wartes, and maketh thē rise by the roots. And the sedes drunke, do soften the belly, and put away winde. And the seedes drunke in wine, do put awaye al melancholy sadnesse, stirre vppe the minde, cause boldenesse vnto ẏ fearefull, and make merry the sad. And the Basill helpeth the stomacke, for that digesteth harde meates, and profitable it is both to the Lyuer and heart. And the hearbe brused, and mixed with Barley meale and vineger, and that laide in playster forme, doeth helpe the inflamations of the Lungs. And the sauour of the Basill doth helpe ẏ stopping of the braine & nose, purgeth the head, and stayeth ẏ reume. And the iuyce of the Basill dropped into the eies, doeth cienle the mystes of the eies, and running of them, and the hearbe eaten worketh the like. These hitherto of the properties of the Basill.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the sweete Majorame. Cap. xiiij.

AND first the Majorame for the pleasant smell, is an herbe nuche esteemed of all persons, and maye either be sowne in the seedes, or set in the slips. And ioyeth also to be set in olde dung, the earth before well digged vppe, and to be rather set in moist and shadowie places, for so it groweth the fuller & big, but set in an open & sunnie place, it groweth the shorter & crisped. And it may either be sown or set in ẏ spring tyme, & remoued into beds wel dressed wt drie dūg, for it prospereth ẏ better.

¶ The

¶ The Phisick helpes.

Maiorame is hote and dry in the second degree, and ought to bee gathered in the sommer when it floureth, and after dried in a shadowy place, for so it will serue for a yeare. And now the Maiorame sodden in lie, and the heade washed with the same, doeth cease the grieuous paine of the heade. And the Maiorame comforteth the braine, openeth the stopping of the members, and taketh away the disease called Apoplexia. And the pouder of the Maiorame giuen with meate or drunke in wine, doth heate the coldnesse of the stomache, and comforteth digestion. And the drie leaues brought to pouder, and annointed with honny, do take away the blacke and blewe spottes of the shinne. And the oyle of Maiorame doth heate so well the inner members, as the outwarde, and the ioyntes and sinewes. And the oyle also doth heate womens places, and applyed warme, doeth helpe all griefes, comforteth the brayne, and all the members of the body. Also this herb hath the propertie of heating all the inner members, softneth the mylte, & asswageth the swelling thereof. And the decoction of the herb drunke, doth helpe the water beginning betweene the shinne, the straightnesse of making water, and the grypings of the bodye. And the floures and herbe layde in a fyne bag, and that applyed to the stomache, doth take away the payne and griefe thereof. And the pouder of the Maiorame drawne vp in the nose, do both clense and heate the heade, and may serue to all persons for the like cause. And the vapour of the decoction of the herb, receiued beneath doth clense the matrice, and the herb made in a pessary, and applyed vp, doth draw downe the termes. And the herbe with wax, applyed in playster forme on loose members, doth strengthen them, asswageth swellynges, and other griefes. And the pouder of the Maiorame with a little Synger, drawn vp in the nose, doeth prouoke sneesings, and stayeth rume. These hitherto of the properties of the Maiorame.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Marigolde. Cap. xxvj.

And first the Marigolde is a floure verye well knowen, and vsed to be found in the most gardēs at this day, whych renueth euery moneth, & is to be founde as well in winter as sommer. And of this named (of ỳ Italiās) the monethly floure or floure of euery moneth. And this floure also of certayne, is named ỳ husbandmans Dyall, for that the same so aptlye declareth the houres of morning and euening, by the opening and shutting

of it. Also named the sunnes floure, for that after the ryſing of the sunne vnto noone, this floure openeth larger and larger, but after the noone time, vnto the setting of the sun, the floure closeth and shutteth more & more so that after ỹ setting of the sun, the floure is then wholy shutte vp togither. And now the sædes be commonly sowne in a well laboured and dressed ground, and in the increase of the Moone, for so they prosper the better. And to haue them growe bigge, and to beare thicke and brode floures, you ought then to remoue and set the yong plantes often, and this alwayes in the increase of the Moone, and that you also put many sædes into one hoale togither, and to water them in the springing vp. And if in the remouing you set them thinne, they prosper the better.

¶ The Phisick helpes.

The floures are to be steped in vineger and salte, for so they maye be kepte for two yeres. And nowe the floures drunke in wyne, do cõfort the stomacke, procure an apetite to meate, consume the humours of the stomacke, and heate a colde stomacke. And the rynde of ỹ roote sodden in wine and drunke, doth both digeſt the euill humours, and helpeth the diseases of the Liuer.

And the pouder of the rynde of the roote mixed with the iuyce of ỹ Fenel, a little wine, and a litle oyle, and boyled togyther vnto a thicknesse, and a little waxe after put to the same, making therof an ointment, with the which annoynt on the mult, or colde stomacke, and it doth mightily helpe. And the iuyce of the leaues dropped into the eares, doth slea the wormes.

And the rindes brought to pouder, and layde on euill Vlcers, doeth heale them. And the iuyce of the herbe and roote put in glister forme, doth helpe the palsie members. And to women hauing the breastes swollen, through the stay of monthly courses, let the floures of ỹ Marigolde, the Hyppenarde, and wine bee ministred, whiche both doeth swage the swelling, and prouoke the termes, as writeth Matheus Silua-ticus. And against the pissing of blonde, take the floures of the Marigolde, and after the boyling drinke the same, and it will staye it in short time. And the water distilled of the floures, doth heale all griefes of the eyes, whether the same be cauſed of heate or of colde, & cleareth the eyes, besydes it putteth awaye all griefes of the heade. Thele hytherto, of the properties of the Marigolde.

Of

¶ Of the ordering, and care, of the Lauender. Cap. xxxj.

And firste the Lauender is an herbe swéete smelling, and at this day growing in most gardēs, of the which be two kindes, the one growing high, & sēding forth a great souor, which for that it giueth no lesse sauour than the Spike, is of the same named Spikenarde. And the other, both in the largenesse of the leafe, and sauour is lesser. And for that the same is occupyed in bathes, and in the washing of hands, for the swéetnesse of smel, therefore of moste men named the lauender. Also the first named the Male, and the other the Female, as sundrye authours write. And nowe the Lauender ioyeth to be set in an open and sunnye place, and the earth stony, for it prospereth the better.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

Lauēder, hath the vertue of heating and drying, but profiteth not vnto the digestion of meate. And nowe if anye applyeth the Lauender often to the nose in smelling therto, it doth both comfort aud cleare ẏ syght. And if any boyleth the Lauender in water, and that a shirt wet in the same, and after dryed againe (be worne) will suffer no louse after to abide in the shirt, so long as the shirte kepeth the smell. And the floures haue singular vertues, especially to the helping of ẏ Apoplexi. Also the floures stieped in wine and after distilled, and of the same holden in the mouth, doth recouer the speech loste proceeding of the Apoplexi, and hath many other vertues beside. For the same helpeth all the cold griefes of the braine, crampe, and gripings of the bodye, proceeding of cold. It helpeth also the stopping of the milt, heateth ẏ belly, and sendeth downe the termes, And the herbe with the floures shred ought to be distilled in June, whych drunke, vnto the quantitie of two ounces doth helpe the giddinesse of the heade: and the lyke if ẏ water be rubbed all ouer the heade, and so let drye in of it selfe. And the same water in lyke quantitie vsed doeth helpe the Crampe, the Apoplexi, the astonishing, and trembling of the members and handes. Also this water helpeth the palsie members, if they be often annointed & rubbed with it. And it helpeth the heauinesse in the mouing of ẏ tong by drinkyng three ounces at a time. Also it helpeth ẏ vlcers, & paynes of the teeth if ẏ same be often holden in the mouth: and the same water helpeth the blistering of the mouth, if the mouth be washed with it. These hither of the properties of the Lauender

Of

¶ Of the Ordering, and care of the Spikenarde. Cap. xxv.

AND first the Spikenarde groweth like vnto the Lauender, sauing that the leaues be thicker and bigger, and beareth also a longer stalke, and bigger floures, whiche be of purple colour, like vnto the Lauender, and hath besides greater vertues. And nowe the Spikenarde loueth to be sette in a fatte earthe, well laboured and dressed, and in an open and sunny place of the garden.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The Spyknarde is hote in the first degree, and drye in the second, and causeth vrine. And if of the decoction of it, be a playster made, and the same layd vnto the priuie place, it stayeth the superfluous course of the termes, and taketh away the humours of womens places. And the Spikenarde drunke with colde water puts away the weakenesse, and trembling of the hearte. And the Spikenarde infused in lye, and the heade washed therewith, doth cause the haire to growe: and helpeth the sheading of the haire. And the oyle of the Spike, wel drawn by glasse, is marueilous sweete, and hath many vertues, and especially vnto the palsie members, if they be annoynted therewyth. And the sayde oyle doeth ease the Goute, and all other griefes of the ioyntes.

Also the oyle doth helpe the swellings of the stomacke, the diseases of the Liuer, the kydneys and the kings cupll, And the decoction of the Spikenarde, helpeth against the palsie of the tong, comforteth the sinowes, and dryeth vp the morsture, occupying the instrument of the tong. And the floures of the Spikenarde infused in wine, and set in ỹ sunne for a certayne space, in a narrow mouth glasse wel stopped, and after drystilled by glasse (in Balneo Mariæ) with a softe fyre, and if the freshe floures mare be had, then nede you not to refuse them in wine. And now this herbe is very precious, and helpeth al cold griefes as wel within, as without the body. Also the griefes of the head or brain if a linnen cloth dipped in the same be applyed to the nose. And the same water helpeth the rume, and distilling of the head. And this water drunke, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, doth help the Colliche passion, proceeded of colde. And it ceaseth the paynes and giddines of the head, proceeding of a cold cause, if the noule of ỹ head, and forehead, be annoynted therwyth. And this water helpeth the cold, and palsie member, heating them and puttyng away the shaking of them. These hytherto, of the propertie of the Spikenarde.

Of

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecrets of the white Lillie. Cap. xxxiiij.

And firſt the white Lillie, for the beautie & ſmel, is affirmed of Plinie to be next to the Roſe, and higher of growth than the moſte floures of the Garden. And the increaſe of this Lillie is maruellous, in that one rote ſendeth forth and yeldeth (for ẏ more part) fiftie heades. And Palladius willeth the Lillie to bee planted in ẏ moneths of October, Nouember and March, & that in a fat and well dreſſed earth, and the heades ſet a ſpanne, or a foote aſunder, like as is taught hereafter in the ſetting of Garlike. And to make them to beare purple floures, gather (as Plinie teacheth) to the number of .x. or .xy. ſtalkes, in the moneth of July, or when they floure, whiche binde togither, and hang in the ſmoke, and after that ſlip of the leaues, making the ſtalkes naked, which ſteepe in the red wine lyes, in ẏ moneth of March (ſo long) vntill the knots of the ſtalkes haue ſufficiently drunke in and appeare well coloured as a purple, and then ſet ẏ ſtalks into the earth, hauing the wine lyes hanging both on the ſtalkes and rotes, and thoſe after ſhall ſende forthe and beare purple floures. And Florentinus writeth, ẏ the floures of ẏ Lillies wil ſhew red, if that betweẽ the rinde & the ſmal heades growing about the rote, you poure of the fine pouder of the Vermillion, or elſe the pouder of the red leade, in regarding that you harme not the ſmall heades growing about. And likewiſe dying them of any other coloure, euen of the ſame coloure will the floures growe: as if you liſte to haue eyther greene, or bleiwe Lillies. And to haue Lillies all the yeare, take the buds not opened, with ſome of the ſtalke, thoſe put into a newe earthen potte, not glaſed, and after ſtoppe cloſe the mouthe of the potte, and when you ſhall neede of them, then ſette thoſe on the ſyde of a Baſon in the Sunne, and after they haue felte a whyle the warmth, then wyll they open and ſpreade abroade.

And Anatolius writeth, that you may haue Lillies at diuers

times of the yeare, if that in the proper time of the yeare, you set of youre heades twelue fingers deepe, other eighte fingers deepe, and other but foure fingers, and thus in the growing vp, will they beare their floures at sundrie times one after the other. And on this wise, may many other floures bee caused to growe, and beare at diuers diuers times.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The white Lillie is hote and drye of qualitie, but the floures be of a temperate qualitie. And nowe the oyle of the Lillies doe greatlye profyte, by annoynting on the belly, for that it heateth womens plates, and softneth the humors there hardned. And the roote sodden, & laide on hot impostumes, doth ripen them. And the roote rosted in hot embers, and bruised, and after mixed with Rose water, and the same laide on the holy fire, doth heale the same, if it be daily vsed. And in the like sorte laide on wounds, doeth increase the flesshe on them. And the roote sodde and bruised, and mixed with Barrows greale, or oile Olyue, and after laid on impostumes, doth mightily soften them, and of the Lillie is made a good ointment, on this wise, take of the white Lillie rootes, of the rootes of Brancursine, of the Marshe mallowe rootes, of eche, the fourth part of a pounde, these bruse togither very well in four measures of wine, and after seeth all in halfe a pinte of oyle, vnto a thicknesse, whych straine throughe a lynnen cloth, puttyng therto a little waxe, and make therof an oyntment, and annoint it on the hard wilte on the left side, and it will greatly help, for that it doth not onely soften the same, but putteth away the paines thereof. And the roote of the Lillie sodden, and after boyled with oile of Roses, and annointed, doeth heale burnings. And the roote sodden in wine, and the same drunke in the euening at the going to bed, doeth purge downeward all noysome humors of the body. And the leaues sodden in vineger, and laid plaisterwise, do heale woundes. And the roote rosted, and mixed with honny, and that laide plaisterwise, doth heale loose and cutte synewes. These hitherto of the properties of the Lillie.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the wood Lillie. Cap. xxxv.

AND firste the woodde Lillie, or Lillie of the valley, is a floure maruellous sweet, flourishing especially in ỳ Spring time,

time, and growing properly in woddes, and chiefly in valleis, and on the sides of hilles. But nowe for the greate commoditie, & vse known (of the floure) the same of late yeares is brought and planted in the Garden. And this hearbe springeth vp with two leaues togither, in fashion like the white Lilly, and in the middle doth a slender and small stalke spring vppe, in the top of which, grow forth little smal floures, in a maner white, and of a pleasaunte smell. And the roote of it, is white within the earth, but wrinckled without. And this Lillie also ioyeth to be set in a moist grounde and shadowie place of youre Garden, for so it prospereth the better. And the commodities of this floure, is alwaies had in the spring time.

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The woodde Lillie, is colde and moiste in the second degree: and the floures bee of greater effect than the hearbe, and the roote passeth the floures in vertue. And nowe the floures drunke in newe wine, do strengthen the harte, the braine, the lyuer, and all the spirituall members (as they doe name them) and of this the same is aptly ministred, vnto the panting of the harte, giddinesse of the head, the falling sycknesse, the Apoplexi and Frensinesse. And this wine doeth helpe those whyche bee payned with a trembling of the heart, and prickings aboute the hearte, and the members whyche shake and tremble: and it doeth also stoppe the passages of the leaprie beginnyng, that the same spreade no further abroade. Also it doth put awaye the scabbe and ringworme, annoynted vppon: and the sooner, if you washe them sundrye tymes, with the water. Also it asswageth the swellings of the stings of Bees, Wasps, and such like, by striking or annointing the water vppon them. And the water of the distilled wine, doth putte away the inflamation and myste of the eyes, by vsing the same. And some distill this water for the abone saide diseases, on this wyse. Fyrst they take the floures, and laying them to stiepe for a moneth in newe wine, and taking them quite from the wine, they after distill ouer fyue tymes in a Limbecke or bodye of glasse, whiche wine so distilled, is more pretious than golde. For if any drinketh of this water, with sixe graines of pepper, & a little of the Lauēder water, he neede after not feare the Apoplexi in that moneth. And Otho Brunfellius teacheth the making of this wine, on this wise: firste take a gallon glasse fillee with ẏ best old wine, into which put a pound of the floures, setting the same in the sun for 40. daies: after distill it in a Limbecke of glasse twice ouer, into which put a little Lauender water & pepper, but other take of the old wine, putting into ẏ same a

pounde of the floures, and after foure dayes standing in the Sunne, distill the same, into whiche they put of the floures of Lauender, and Rosemarie, and other good spices, distilling it ouer againe, and then kepe it as a moste precious water, well stopped in a narrow mouthed glasse. And a spoonefull of this water giuen to the patient at the point of death, doth reuiue him and prolong his life vntil his naturall tyme appointed. And it doth comfort the braine, helpeth the Apoplexi, ceaseth the Colliche passion, and helpeth the impostume hapning in the hinder parte of the braine. Also thys distylled water giueth a good memory and ready witte, by annoynting the hinder parte or poule of the heade, and forehead therwith. And the water of the floures onlye distilled in the middle of the spring and dronke vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces at a time, doth helpe those which be poysoned. And ỹ same water helpeth the byt of a madde dogge, the byth of chylde, comforteth the braine, the hart, and the senies, and also putteth awaye the falling sickneese if the same be dronke for foure dayes together. And the same water, dronk, helpeth the strangurie, the pricking about the hearte, and inflamation of the liuer. And the water dronke, doth stay the excesse of the moneth courses. These hitherto of the properties of the wood Lillie.

¶ Of the ordering, and care of the Floure-deluce. Cap. xxxvj.

AND firste the Flouredeluce, is a floure well knowen to all persons, bearing leaues, both bigger, flatter, and larger, than that called the Sedge. And now the rote and hearbe needeth no other diligence of setting, than to be planted in a drye earth, wel laboured and dressed, about the beginning of March. And the rotes growe into iointes, solyde, and verye sweete smelling: whyche some plucke vppe, about the beginning of the spring, and cutting them into round slices, they after stitch them through with a needle, and hang them vp to drye, in the shadowe.

And those rotes also be best commended, whiche be verye short, very harde, somewhat red, sweete smelling, byting in the taste, and, whiche in the beating of it in a morter, causeth the person to sneyse.

The

¶ The Phisicke helpes.

The roote of the Flourdeluce, is onelye vsed in medicine, and is hote and drye of qualitie in the seconde degree. And it is also verye profitable against ỹ cough, in extenuating those humors of the breast whiche hardly are spit forth. And it purgeth the grosse fleumaticke, and cholericke humours, by taking fiue drammes of the roote, with water and hony, and the same drunke, prouoketh sleepe, stayeth the teares, and easeth the griefs of the body. And drunke with vineger, doth helpe the diseases of the milt, the cramp, the colde shaking which come before the fyt of the ague, and helpeth also the shedding of the syperme. And drunke in wine, prouoketh monethly courses. And the decoction thereof applyed to the womans priuie part, doth soften the hardnesse thereof, & likewise open the stopping thereof. And mixed with Turpentine, & so annointing, doth ease the griefs of the ioines, and hips: and the pouder onely drawne vp into the nose, prouoketh sneesing, and cleanseth the heade. And by chawing the roote in the mouth, doth so amend the stincking breath: and the same taketh away the strong sauour comming from the armeholes. And the greene or fresh roote boyled, and the same laid plaister-wise, doth soften wens, and other harde impostumes.

And the pouder of the drye roote, mixed with honny, and the same thicke laide on vlcers, doth cleanse them. And the same applyed plaisterwise, doth draw out the bones in wounds, and doth couer againe the bare flesh. And the pouder of the roote applyed plaisterwise to ỹ forehead, doth greatly helpe the paine and griefe of the heade. And the pouder of the roote, mixed with the pouder of the white Rose-wozte and two partes of honny, the same annointed, doth take away the pimples of the face, and al spots caused by the sunne. And against the dropsie, take a newe laide egge, pouring out the white, and to the yolke put in so muche of the iuyce of the roote, as was of the white, after set the same egge a while in the hote embers, which sufficiently warme, suppe off fasting in the morning, and the patient shall after send forth a maruellous abundaunce of water betweene the shin and the siege, and this often experienced. These hitherto of the properties of the Flourdeluce.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Pionie. Cap. xxxvij.

And first the Pionie is an hearbe at this day wel knowen, wherof be two kinds, the Male, and the Female. It

groweth after this manner, as with the leaues hard, from the neather parte, and in colour like to the Horehounde, and the rootes cleauing togither like to the rootes of the Violets, and Reddiſhe in colour, bearing big and purple floures, and reſembling the forme of the redde Roſe, hauing within the floure a yealowiſhe ſeede like to the Roſe, of whiche come the coddes, in faſhion like to Almonds, and growe togither, hauing within red ſeedes, to the bignelle of the ſmaller peaſe. And the ſtalke alſo on which the ſeedes grow, beareth big and reddiſh floures, which of ſome, is named the Bleſſed Roſe. And nowe the ſeede is named the Bleſſed Roſe. And the ſeedes ioy to be ſowen in a well dreſſed earth, and to be weeded about, at the comming vp of the plantes.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

The roote of the Pionie heateth and dryeth in the ſecond degree, & endureth for tenne yeares in his efficacie, and hath alſo the vertue of comforting and cheriſhing the body, and cauſeth belydes vrine, & purgeth the liuer and kidneis. Alſo the roote boiled in wine & drunk, doth purge the bloud. And the roote of the Piony is aptly miniſtred to women in childbed, being not throughlye purged after the birth of childe, for that the ſame cauſeth the comming down of the termes, & purgeth them ſo without harme. And the quantitie of an almond, of ỹ roote, is to be miniſtred at one time. Alſo the roote boyled in wine & drunke, doth helpe the gripings of the belly, and ſheading of the gal. And helpeth the paines of the kidneys and bladder, if the ſame bee with anye ſtopping of the vrine, and a ſmoake made of the little fine braunches of the roote, and receiued into the noſe, doeth put awaye the kings euill. And the Piony roote doth take away blacke ſpottes of the body. And the roote hanged about the nerke, doth put awaye the falling ſickneſſe, as by a late practiſe was tryed, that whiles a childe had this roote hanging aboute the necke, the childe ſo long was not gricued with the diſeaſe, but when the ſame was taken from hys necke, then was hee vexed in like ſorte, as before. And thys did the male Piony roote, but the ſeedes do not the like. And of thys alſo may the male be known from the female. And the female Piony roote boyled in wine and drunke, doth aptly purge women after the byrth of childe, and the ſame doth the ſeedes of it. And in other matters the rootes of bothe haue in a manner the like properties. And ỹ freſh roote of the Pionie, as Menardus writeth, worne about the neck, doth put away the vapors flying vppe to the braine, and ſtrengtheneth the braine, but the male doth thys, which beareth leaues like to the

Walnut,

Walnut, hauing a white roote of a fynger highneſſe, and a ſpan long. And certaine will that the roote be digged vppe in the wane of the Moone, ſhe then being vnder the earth. And the ſeeds of the Piony doe helpe in cauſes eſpecially in the termes of women, whyche ſende them downe, and the dead vongling. Alſo the ſeedes dzunke in wine, doth helpe the harde deliuery of childe. And the ſeedes of the Piony bzuſed with Setwale, Galingale, and Sugar, of eche a like waight, ẏ ſame pouder taken morning and euening, doth put away poyſon, and gently looſeth the belly. And tenne oz twelue ſeedes of the Pionie, dzunke in olde wine, do ſtay the ſuperfluous courſes of women. And .xv. ſeedes dzunke (of the blacke) in either water and honny, oz wine, doe helpe the night mare, the ſtrangiyng of the ſecreates, and paines of the matrice. And the pouder of the ſeedes of Piony miniſtred in meate and dzynk to childzen, doth ſend forth the ſtone begynnyng in them. And the pouder of ẏ roote of Piony (miniſtred in wine) in whyche the roote it ſelfe and Mugwoꝛte ſhall be boyled, doeth helpe the falling ſickeneſſe. And the ſame poulder boyled in caſtoꝛie and dzunke, helpe the paliie. Theſe hytherto of the pzoperties of the Piony.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the white Poppie. Cap. xxxviij.

AND firſt the white Poppie muſt be ſowen in hote and dzy places, like as you doe other pothearbes. It is thoughte, that this hearbe doth the better come vp there, whereas twigs oz roddes, and ſhzubbes of trées be bzent. But the Poppy and Dill, haue the like conditions and oꝛder of ſowing, whiche the Charuill hathe. And Palladius willeth the Poppie to be ſowen in September, in hote and dzie places, among the pot hearbs. And yet in temperate and colde places in the monethes of Januarie, Febzuarie, March, and Nouember, either alone oz with other hearbs.

¶ The Phiſicke helpes.

Poppie is colde and dzie in the firſte degree, yet as touching the kindes, the white Poppye is colde and moyſte, and the blacke, colde and dzy, whych doth moze moztifie. And the ſeeds of the white gathered in the Sommer, when they be rype, may wel be kept foz. v. yeres, whych haue the vertue of pzouoking oz cauſing ſleepe, & of aſſuaging. And now to pzouoke ſleep, make a plaiſter of the white Poppy ſeeds bzuſed, and mixed wyth the white of an egge and womans mylke, whyche

whiche apply hote to the foreheade, and on the temples. And the women of Salerne giue to their chyldren the pouder of the white Poppy, with milke, to cáuſe them to ſleepe. And the ſeedes of the white Poppie, or the hearbe it ſelfe bruſed, and mixed with the oyle of Roſes, and thus laid plaiſterwiſe on vlcers proceeded of a bruſe, doth draw out the great heate. And the ſame applied to a hote lyuer, doth much helpe. And the pouder of the white Poppie ſeedes, mixed with oyle Oliue, and annoynting the ridge of the backe with it, doeth take away the ache of the ioynts, and ſtrengtheneth them. And the iuyce of the white Poppie mixed with the oyle of Roſes, and annoynting the feete therewith, doth put away the paine and ache of the hote goute. And the ſeeds of the white Poppy beaten to pouder, and mixed with the oile of Violets, and annointing the backe bone therewith, doeth helpe both the burning of the Ague, and heate of the Lyuer. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the white Poppy.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the ſloure Petilius. Cap. xxxix.

AND firſt, the ſloure named Petilius, whiche of ỳ Frenchmen, is named, the little Indian eie, muſte be ſowen in the mids of ſummer, that in the ende of Haruеſt it maye waxe to a tree, and bring forth floures vnto winter. It is alſo ſowen in the ſeedes, and ſet in ſlippes, but the ſlips alwaies die, throughe the ſharpe colde in the Winter time (howe ſoeuer they be tended,) and yet they refuſe no ground. But they proſper better in a fatte grounde, and ſhote vp a mightie height, ſo that they appeare buſhie, and ſpreade into manye branches, like to a mightie tree, or greate ſtalke, reſembling neareſt vnto the ſweete Bryar tree.

¶ Of the ordering, and care of the Veluet Floure, or Floure Armour. Cap. xl.

AND firſte this floure, (in a manner) neuer decaieth, but keepeth ſtill his colour, and the floure alſo is eared, much like to an eare of corne, very purple of colour, and beautifull to beholde, yet the ſame hath neither ſmell, nor taſte. And it properly groweth vppe in the moneth of Auguſte, and endureth vnto Haruеſt,

Harueſt. And when all other floures be withered & dead, and it alſo in a manner withered, then after the moyſtening wyth water, it doth recouer againe, and ſerueth to make Winter Garlandes. And of this it is ſowen in many places in pottes of earth, that growing from Auguſte, it maye flouriſhe vnto October, in whyche tyme bearyng the floure, to be gently and tenderly gathered. And the floures ſo gathered, to be putte into an Ouen (after the drawing of breade) and there gentlye dryed, after whych the maydens of Fraunce and other Countries doe lay them charily vppe, and kæpe them vnto Winter time, to make Garlands of them, and to hang them about the houſe. And nowe of thys floure is here ſufficientlye written, which althoughe it be not to be counted vppon, among the ſmellyng floures, yet for the beautie thereof, worthye to bee ſowne in Gardens.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

The hearbe named floure Armour, is of qualitie cold and drie in the thirde degree. And of this the floure of it boyled in wine and honey, and drunke, doeth helpe the perilous fluxe of bloude, & the continuall paine of the often ſcouring of the belly, and ſtayeth alſo the abundaunce of reddes in women, and the white fluxes of the belly. Alſo the ſame helpeth the ſpitting vppe of bloude, eſpecially when any veſſel or part in the lungs or breaſt ſhall be broken. And the herb ſodden, and layde plaiſter wiſe on bruſed members, doth putte away clotted bloud, and healeth the places ſpeedily. And the floures boyled in wine and drunke, doth help the byte of venomous wormes, the Sciaticke, the diſtilling of the vrine, and a rupture. And the pouder of this hearbe vnto the quantitie of three halfe penec in waight, drunke in white wine, doth ſtay the rewme diſtilling from the heade. And the hearbe ſodden in wine, and the fundamente fomented therewyth, doeth ſtay and take awaye the fluxe, the piles, and in the ſame maunce applyed, doeth helpe the often deſire vnto the ſtoole. And the roote holden in the mouth, doth ceaſſe the paine of the teeth. And the rootes bruſed and mixed with Way butter, and of that made an ointment, whiche annointed on inflamations, doeth aſſwage them, and the hearbe doth keepe cloths and garments from being harmed by wormes, and moathes. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the purple Veluet floure.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Gilyflowre. Cap. xlj.

And firste the Gilyflowre for his swéetenesse and beautie, is named of the Frenchmen, the little eie, and of the Italians Garyophilon, for that it giueth a swéete smell and sauour, like to the spice named Cloues. And nowe the séedes of the Gilyflowre be seldome sowne, but at the beginning of the Spring, and Haruest, you may breake off slips from the rote, and sette them againe, being writhed at the ende, in a halfe tubbe or potte, the earth therein made fat with rotten dung, and when the frostes oppresse and nippe them in the Winter time, they may then be remoued and set vnder some couert, in places safe from the bitter colde. And in faire dayes when as the Sunne shineth warme, then sette the potte or halfe tubbe abroad, that the plants may so be comforted with the warmenesse of the ayre. And you may sometimes suffer the plants to be moysned a little with a gentle raine. And after those plantes sette in the beddes, doe spreade in the Sommer into small braunches, then do the Gardners slip them off from the greater stalkes, about the fóote of them, before the cuppes at the toppes (where the floures appeare) be sprung out. And after this manner, you may dresse and sette out a whole bedde with a few plants if you wil. And there be some which take Cloues and bruse them, lapping them aboute the stalkes, neare to the rotes, and some make holes thorough with a bodkin, that the floures after sprung vppe maye sauoure of them. And there be others which write, that by the often remouing and setting of the plante, the floures spreade the broader and pleasaunter to the eye. And Cardanus writeth, that you maye haue Gilyfloures (in a manner) vnto Halowentide, if scraping of the vpper rinde of the plantes, you so set them againe with the rotes in horsedung, which so causeth them to beare fayre floures in the Winter, so that you kéepe them from the colde ayre.

And

And certaine newe practitioners write, that you may make one ſtalke to bring forth floures of many coloures, if you take the ſædes of euery coloure of the Gilyfloure, and putte them al togither into a thinne ſmall rēde or Terdill of a ſhēpe or goate, or elſe tyed vppe in a thinne worne linnen cloth, ſetting the ſame in the earth well mixed with dung: whiche after the watering will cauſe the plante to come vppe, bearing the like number of coloures in one ſtalke, as there were ſæds ſowen. And there be ſome which write, that if you myxe the Baſill ſædes with the Gilyfloure ſædes, and vſe them (as aboue ſaide) that they will ſpring togither on one ſtalke. And the leaues of the floures, putte into a glaſſe of Wineger, and ſette in the Sunne for certaine dayes, doe make a pleaſaunt Wineger.

Of the ordering and care of the Strawberies. Cap. xlij.

And firſt the Strawberie is accompted among thoſe herbes which growe in the fieldes of the owne accorde. And ẏ berries be much eaten at all mens tables in the Sommer, for the pleaſauntneſſe of them, whiche for a more delighte in eating, they dreſſe with wine and Suger. And as touching the rehearſall of the forme of this hearb, nēdeth not, ſēing the ſame is well knowen vnto all perſons. And nowe it aptly groweth in ſhadowie places, and rather groweth vnder the ſhadowe of other hearbes, than by growing alone. And yet the plants ſet in Gardens, will growe vnto the bignelle of the Mulberrie, if the earth before in the beddes be well dreſſed and trimmed, & diligently tended of the Gardner. But the herbe of it ſelf continueth not aboue a yeare.

The Phiſicke helpes.

The Berries be cold and moyſt in the third degree, and the like is the hearb. And Vigonius writeth, that the Strawberrie leaues be of a cold qualitie, ſo that the iuyce of the, with the wine of the Pomgranats, & a little Roſewater mixed togither, & applyed, do helpe hot impoſtumes in the beginning, & in the increaſe of them. And ẏ ſtraw-

berrie leaues vſed in a bath, do greatly helpe the ſtone. And to helpe the mightie paines of the hips, take three or foure handfull of the Strawberrie leaues, ſeething them in water, and after bathing the from the neather parte vpwarde: whiche ſo done, then annoynt the grieued place with this oyntment following. Take of the ointment of marſhe Wallowes one ounce, of hony halfe an ounce, of waxe a dramme waight, al theſe togither, making thereof an ointment. And this doeth not onelye helpe the ache of the hippes, but ſoftneth the matter hardned in them, and prouoketh vrine. And the Berries bee profitable to men, in that they take awaye the vnnatural heate, and doe eſpecially profite the cholleriche perſons, for that they coole and moiſten them. Alſo take of the iuyce of the berries, and of plantaine water, of eche eight ounces, of Roſed hony two ounces, of the iuyce of the Mulberries one ounce, of Albigræci and of Balauſtia, of eche a dramme, al theſe mixe togither, waſhing the mouth therewyth, whiche ſo helpeth the impoſtumes of the throate. And this hearbe eaten with meate, doth helpe ſuche diſeaſed in the myltе: and the lyke doth the iuyce of the hearbe dronke. And the ſame iuyce gyuen with the white Pepper, doth helpe the ſhorte winded. And the berries alſo doe ſtaye thirſte, profite the ſtomache, and eſpecially the cholleriche. And the decoction of the rootes dronke, doeth qualifie the Liuer, being taken morning and euening. And the like doth the decoction of the hearbe and roote togither, qualifie the heate of the Liuer, and cleanſeth the reyns and bladder. And the beſte diſtilling of the berries is when they be ripe, but not ouer ſoft: and thoſe whiche growe in the hillie woodded be the better. And nowe the diſtilled water dronke, or mixt with ſomewhat and ſo dronke, doth qualifie the vnnatural heate, and ſtayeth thirſte. And the ſame water dronke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a tyme, doeth helpe the leaprie, and purgeth the blonde, by drinking of it in wine, or otherwiſe eaten with breade, and cleanſeth the foule ſcabbe of the bodye. And in the ſame maner dronke, doth helpe the liuer, the Kings euil, toſeth the breaſt, comforteth the heart, purgeth the blonde, and preuayleth againſte the ſtone of the loynes, kidneys, and bladder. Alſo it helpeth vlcers of the throat, the grieuous ſwellings of the ſame, and the ſtincke of the mouth, if anye gargell the ſame in the mouth or throate. And dronke of women, doth cleanſe them, and ſend down theyr termes. Alſo it healeth al filthy corruptions of the legges, if they be waſhed morning and euening with the ſame, or with linnen cloths wette and applyed. And it cureth filthy wounds, if they ſhal be waſhed in the ſame water, or vſing to drinke of the water. Alſo it putteth away the ſwelling of the face, if ꝑ face be ſundrie times waſhed therewyth. And mixed with ſalt, and diſtilled ouer againe, it doth both coole & cleare the eyes. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Strawberries.

¶ Of

¶ Of the orderi g and care of the Borage and Buglosse. Cap. xliij.

And first the Borage is sowen in the moneth of August, and September, and beste sowen in the moneth of Aprill, eyther alone in beddes, or aboute the borders of the new beddes of other hearbes. And it cannot aptly be sowen in anye other [illegible] the yeare, yet maye the plante after the comming vp, be [illegible] well remoued in any time (in a manner) of the yeare, and the [illegible] ought to be gathered but halfe ripe, leaste they other[illegible] fall out of the huskes. And the hearbe with the [illegible]er the plucking vp, must be layde togither on a hea[illegible] the space of two or three dayes, that the seedes may so [illegible]e vnto their full ripenesse. And when time so serueth, th[illegible] maye you rub the seedes forth on a linnen cloth, for otherwise you can not aptly come by them. And the seedes thus had, may wel be kept for two yeares. And the Buglosse, whyche the Romaines name the Oxe tong, and with vs Langdebeefe, hath the like order in sowing and vsing of the seedes, which the Borage hath. And yet some write, it ioyeth to be sowen in an open and sunnie place, and that the earth be well laboured and dressed before, for so it prospereth the better. And the Buglosse also for his singular vertues, deserueth in all Gardens to be sowen, as a right necessarie herbe.

The Phisicke helpes.

Borage, which of Galen and Dioscorides is named the Buglosse, is hote and moyste in the first degree. Which the selfe same Galen wytnesseth (writing) that the Buglosse is of moyste and temperate hotenesse, so that put into wine in the drinking, causeth gladnesse & mirth. And the Borage boyled in wine, and drunke, doeth engender good bloud. And those which be pained with the giddinesse of the heade, let them take the iuyce of this hearbe, and mixing the same with sugar, drinke therof, whych doth throughly help the same. And agaynst the trembling and panting or beating of the harte, take the sirup of

the iuyce of Bozage, and mixing the ſame with ſugar, and the bones of the Hartes hearte, which often vſed doth helpe the ſame. And the iuyce of the herbe with Vence, if the ſame ſhall be mixed with the ſirup of Bozage, and dzunke mozning and euening, doth encreaſe the ſenſes, and putteth away melancholy. And the rawe floures eaten, do cauſe good bloud, and put awar the trembling of the hart, and they do the like effect: if the floures be dzunke in wine. And the ſirup of Bozage is vſed againſt the kings euill, and the floures dzied & kepte but a yeare, doe ſerue all thoſe diſeaſes, which the herbe it ſelfe helpeth. And the floures put in oyle Oliue, and ſet in the Sunne, for a tyme with the whiche annointing the ſtomacke and region of the heart, it doth greatly comfozt. And the diſtilled water (in Balneo Maria) of the herbe and roote dzunke mozning and euening, to ỳ quantitie of two oz three ounces at a time, doth put away the gripings & ſwellings of the bellie, helpeth the bloudy flixe, and the hardneſſe of fetching winde. And the ſame in like ozder dzunke, doth comfozt the heart and bzain, and encreaſeth memozie & witte, purgeth ỳ bloude, and putteth away frenſincſſe. And linnen clothes wet in that water, and layde to any place, where eyther Spyder oz Waſpe hath venomed, doth take away the paine thereof And a redde Sarcenet wet in the water, and layde on the eyes, doth take away the paine of them, and cleareth them. And the diſtilled water of the floures dzunk, doth helpe al the abouelayd diſeaſes which the herbe doeth, yet the ſame is the mozе pzecious, which doth purge the bloud, putteth away melancholye, and doth marueylouſly purge the heart. And the ſame water helpeth vnto al diſtillations of the head, by dzinking euery euening vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time. And it pzeuayleth alſo againſt burning Agues, and the Jaundiſe, and eaſeth beſydes the Liuer, by either dzinking, oz wetting clothes in the ſame, and ſo applyed often on the region of the Liuer. And now the Bugloſſe hath the ſame vertues which the Bozage hath, and is hote and moyſt in ỳ firſt degree. And the Bugloſſe alſo dzunke in wine, doth helpe ſuche d ſeaſed in the Lungs, troubled with a dzie cough, and boyled in water and hony mixed togither (as Galen writeth) doth help ſuch coughing thzough the roughneſſe of the thzoate. And the Bugloſſe ſteped in wine and tempered with Willecrate, and after dzunk, doth cauſe mirth, and often dzunke in wine, doth purge the redde choller pzoceeding of ouermuch heate. And dzunke in the ſame maner, doth help the cardiack paſſion, and it doth alſo put away the hurtful humours of the Lungs. And the iuyce dzunke with warme water, doth take awaye the ſwelling of the teete. And the wine in which the Bugloſſe ſhall be ſteeped, dzunke, doth maintayne a good memozy. And ỳ ſame dzunke with wine, doeth comfozte the hearte, and engendereth good bloud. And the diſtilled water dzunke mozning and euening, vnto ỳ quãtity of two oz three ounces at a time with ſugar, doth help thoſe diſeaſed with the bloudie flixe, the hardneſſe of fetching winde, and the beſtraught of minde, and hauing a weake bzaine, and the ſame water helpeth againſt all hote ſickneſſes, the Agues, the diſeaſes of

the

the lungs, the Liuer, and the milt, it purgeth alſo the blond and putteth away the pricking of the heart and ſtomache. And the water of the Buglosſe, putteth away the Jaundiſe, cleanſeth the Leaprie and ſcab, and mitigateth the diſtillings of the heade, and it ceaſeth the payn and burning of the eyes, if linnen clothes dipped in the water, be applyed eyther to the foreheade, or eyes: and in the ſame manner applyed, it doth take away the ringing or ſounde of the eares. And ỹ floures of the Buglosſe diſtilled in Balneo Mariæ, do yeeld a precious water to comfort the hearte and braine, being drunke eyther with pouder of pearles, or with the confection of Manus Chriſti, made with pearles. Theſe hytherto of the propertics both of Borage, and Buglosſe,

Of the ordering and care of the Roſemarie. Cap. xliij.

And firſte the Roſemarie is a plante of a pleaſant ſauoure, which for the beautie and ſmell of it, is ſet (at this daye) in Gardens. And the Gardners alſo in our time, do make diuers ſeates, ſome like to benches, and other proper formes (as lyketh them beſt, to be delighted at) in their beddes, running of length and of height. And the ſame plant alſo in medicine, hath a marueilous efficacie. And Dioſcorides nameth it, the Garlād Roſe, for that in times paſt they made Garlands therof. And named alſo of the Greeke Authours Libanotis, for that the leaues and rote of the Roſemarie, do ſauour likeſt to the Frā kenſence. And the Roſemarie hath a hoarie and harde ſtalke downewarde, and in the vpper parte the leaues of it be ſharp, and both greene aboue, and white vnder the leaues. And the floure of it is bleuiſh like to the Lauender, and hath a ſweete ſmel, ſauoring like to Turpentine, or Frankincenſe. And it hath alſo a blacke rote, full of little braunches ſhooting out of it. And may be ſet in any ground, being wel laboured and dreſſed before, but it rather ioyeth to be planted in a rotten earth, and dunged with ſheepes dung.

The Phiſicke helpes.

Roſemary heateth and dryeth in the ſecond degree, & hath the vertue of ſoftning, digeſting, cutting aſunder, and cleanſing. And now

the

the Rosemarie, with the hartes tong, stieped togither for a night in wine, and after drunke, doth put away the kings euill.

And the iuyce both of the roote and herbe mixed with hony, and drunke, doeth helpe the dulnesse of sighte, and purgeth the grolnesse of humors. And the roote brused, and mixed with honny, and layd on vlcees, doth speedily soften thē. And the root with Pillitorie, boyled in wine, and drunke, doth soften the belly, & putteth away the paine therof: and the same also preuayleth against the bite of ẏ venemous beasts or wormes. Also in the same maner tempered with mugwort, do cause vrine, and prouoketh the termes of women: And the Rosemarye floures tyed vp in a fayre lynnen cloth and boyled in wine, which drunke morning and euening, do put away many griefes of ẏ body, but especially helpeth the griefes of the paps. And the floures brought to pouder, and drunke in warme wine, doe make merie the minde, and comforte nature and the bloud, and preserue manye also from diseases, which might otherwise happen. And coles made of the wood or stalkes burnt, and the same brought to pouder, and tyed in a linnen cloth, and rubbing the teeth therwith, do both make the teeth white, and flea the wormes in them. And if he which is diseased with the reume, making a smoke of the barks, doth hold his heade ouer it, it speedily stayeth the same. And the Rosemarie boyled in water and drunke eyther alone or mixed with wine, doth cause an appetite to meate. And he which is mightily drye through a great heate, let him mixe the wine of the sowre Pomgranates with that water beyng colde, in which the Rosemarie leaues shal be boyled, whiche oute of doubt, doth helpe the same. And the pouder of the Rosemary floures, eaten in reare potched egges, doth greatly strengthen nature, and amendeth the bloud. And the wine made of Rosemarie, if you drinke a good draught thereof, morning and euening, doth clense the bloud, prouoketh a desire to meate, expelleth all the inner humours, and helpeth a greate weakenesse. And the Rosemarye boyled wyth the wilde Penny royall or Mintes, in wine and oyle Oliue, and that any diseased doth annoynt him therewyth, doth both cause him to sweat, and helpeth the dropsie. And the Rosemarie boyled in wine wyth the herbe Grace, and a little pepper, and drunke, doth helpe the fallyng sickenesse. And the Rosemarie boyled in wine with pellitorie, doeth help the greatnesse of ẏ Euuela, if ẏ same be gargelled in ẏ mouth. And ẏ Rosemary with the floures boiled in wine, & that drunk warm morning and euening, & neither eating nor drinking three houres after, doth helpe the kings euill, the hard fetching of breath, openeth the pype of the lungs, causeth easie spitting forth, helpeth digestion, ceaseth the gripings of the body, and mundifyeth the bloud. And the floures boyled in the strongest vineger, and layde playsterwise on the Nauil, doth stay shortly after the great fluxe of the belly. These hytherto of the properties of the Rosemary.

Of

Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe Germander. Cap. xlv.

And firſte the herbe Germander, whiche of the Latines is named the little lowe Oke of the Earth, is a plant verye ſhort: which as Dioſcorides deſcribeth: it exceedeth not (in the growth) aboue a ſpan highe, bearing ſmall leaues, dented in like to the Oke leaues, bitter in taſte, bearing purple floure, & ỹ very ſmall. And it alſo groweth of the own accord, in rough and ſtony places, but at this daye the herbe is planted in Gardens. And the ſéedes ought then to be gathered, when the herb beareth floure, which is about the end of Maye, as Galen and Macer do write.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

The herbe hath the vertue of heating, and dryng togither, vnto the thirde degree, and taketh away the hardeneſſe of the Splene or milt, cauſeth vrine, moueth the tearmes, helpeth the dropſie (& thus) if in the beginning of the ſickeneſſe, the patient drinke of the decoction of the herbe in wine thrice a day. And the herb bearing the floure, doth greatly helpe bruſed members, if they be waſhed with ỹ ſame, or drinke of the decoction of it. And the herbe bruſed and layde on the Fiſtulas, in the corners of the eyes, or if oyle made of the herbe, bee dropped into them, doeth forthwith heale them ſo that the patient be a man of a colde complexion, this helpeth. But being a perſon of a hotte and dry complexion, this helpeth not. And the herbe ſodden in wine and drunke, doth put away the kings euil. And the Germander ſodden in wine, with Fenel ſeedes and Sence doth greatly helpe the ſtopping of the liuer and milt, and if Parcely ſeedes be put therto, then the ſame helpeth the ſtrangurie, and ſtone. And the herbe boyled in wine and layde hot on the paſſie members, doth helpe thé. The herbe bruſed with Oyle Oliue, and laide vnto woundes, doeth heale them. And the greene hearbe boyled in Conduit water and drunke, doth helpe the cramme and paſſie. And the ſame decoction drunke, doth helpe thoſe diſeaſed with the cough, the hardneſſe of ỹ milte, the ſtraightneſſe of making water, and the water betweene the ſkinne and fleſhe. And the herb ſodden in wine, and drunke, doth preuaile againſt poyſons, and the ſame layde playſterwiſe, doeth helpe the bite of venemous beaſtes and wormes. And the herbe boyled in

wine and vineger, and drunke, doth helpe the hardneſſe of the milt, an old cough, and old vlcers, being mixed with hony, and ſo drunk. And the pouder of the herbe miniſtred with hony, doth ſlea ẏ wormes in the bodie. And againſt the reume, heate the pouder of the hearbe in a linnen bag, and apply that on the head, which is a ſpecial remedy: and the herbe alſo helpeth the bliſtering of the mouth if it be waſhed with the decoction thereof thrice a day. And it helpeth the ſmall ſcab, if making an ointment with the hearbe, and barrowes greaſe, you annoint the ſhinne dayly with it. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Germander.

¶ Of the ordering and care of the herbe named the bleſſed Thiſtel. Cap. xlvj.

AND firſt the herbe named the bleſſed Thiſtel, is very well knowen, and of great vſe in medicine, and hath a ſpeciall efficacie againſt poyſons, the plague and diſeaſes of the harte. And both the name and forme of the herbe, do declare it to bee a kinde of Thiſtel, although there hath bene a greate controuerſie amongſt the auntient Phiſitions, of the true deſcription of the herbe. And Ruellius ſeemed more exactlye and better to haue iudged of this hearbe, and come nearer to a truth, who deſcribeth the bleſſed Thiſtell, to haue a big ſtalke and prickling, like to the Endiue, with rough and cripſed leaues, & bearing a yealowe floure, and delighteth to be ſowen in a fat erth, in the Garden.

The Phiſicke helpes.

The bleſſed Thiſtel hath the nature, and qualitie, of opening ẏ ſtopping of the members, of pearcing and cauſing vrine. And nowe this herbe in the eating, doth helpe the paines of the head & lungs, and cauſeth good hearing. And it ſharpeneth both the witte and memorie, and putteth away giddineſſe, alſo it comforteth the braine and ſight, not only eating, but alſo annointing the eyes therewith. And when the iuyce of the hearbe cannot be had, then may you vſe the pouder, or the herbe it ſelfe dryed, and ſteeped in water, ſo waſh the eyes therwith, and the iuyce dropped in the eyes, doth help ẏ bloud ſhotten in them. And the herbe ſtayeth the bledyng at the noſe and mouth, if it be applyed to eyther place. And the pouder of the herbe mixed with hony and eaten, doth cauſe the perſon eaſilyer to ſpitte forth fleume and groſſe humours. And it helpeth a weake ſtomache, and cauſeth an appetite to meate, and ſoftneth the hart: alſo it conſumeth the euil bloud and engendereth the good. And the herb boyled in wine, and drunk, doth cauſe the perſon to ſweate. And ẏ herb boyled in water and drunk, doth conſume the euil humours, & preſerue the good. And the herbe eaten doth ſtrengthen the palſie mem-

bers, and healeth the bliſtred lungs. And the herbe boyled, or drunke rawe with wine, doth breake the ſtone. And the hearbe boyled in the vrine of a healthful man childe, and drunke, doth helpe the dropſie and plague, and breaketh all impoſtumes, and maiſtreth the Canker, and falling ſickneſſe. And the pouder of this herbe drunke vnto the quantitie of a dram before twelue houres be paſte of the diſeaſe felt, doth both expel and heale the plague. And the down comming of the floures layd on cuts and new wounds, doth heale them without paine. And the herbe chawed in the mouth doth cure the ſtincke of ẏ breath. And the herbe boyled in wine, and drunk hot, about a quarter of an houre before the comming of the ague, and the patient afterward wel couered with clothes in the bed, doth helpe all agues, both hot and colde. And the like doth the pouder of the herb drunke wyth hot wine and the diſtilled water, recouer the patient in ſhort time. And againſt any poyſon receyued by the mouth, when the ſame happeneth, drinke the pouder and herb, or the iuyce of the herbe, or the diſtilled water, and after couered with clothes, ſweate wel for ẏ ſpace of three houres. And the pouder of the herbe eyther eaten or drunke doth helpe the ſtitches of the ſide. Theſe hitherto of the propertics of the herbe named the bleſſed Thiſtel.

Of the ordering and care, of the hearbe Wormewood. Cap. xlvij.

AND firſte the Wormewood, is an hearbe ſo well knowen throughout England, ẏ it nedeth the ſmaller inſtructiõ of the forme of it: yet be there three kindes of the wormewood deſcribed both of Plinie & Dioſcorides. And the firſt is ẏ Romane wormwood, which alſo of the countrey is named Ponticke, in which the beſt groweth, and the leaues of the ſame the antiẽt Phiſitions miniſter in figs to children, to abate the bitterneſſe. And the ſecond is the ſea wormewood, which alſo is named Sephinum, the ſeedes of which the Phiſitions appoint to the killing of wormes in the body, & of this they name them (at this day) the ſeedes againſt wormes, or wormeſeede. And the thirde is ẏ which is named Santonicum, growing in France beyond the Alpes: & this although it be leſſer than the others, yet it is far gentler in the bitterneſſe. And the ſame wormewood alſo at this day, is ſowen in beds in many gardẽs, & the yong leaues alſo mixed in Sallads, to the great commodity of the ſtomacke & liuer. And the wormewood ought to be gathered in the month of July, at what time the ſeeds apeare to be dryed in ẏ ſhadow.

The Phiſicke helpes.

The wormewoode is hot in the firſt degree, and drie in the third, aſtringent, and endued togither with a bitter and ſharpe qualitie, & the iuice of the hearbe is much hotter, and now the iuice drunk for tenne daies togither, vnto the quantitie of foure drams at a tyme, and tempered with Suger, doeth helpe the Iaundiſe, the water betweene the ſkinne, and driueth forth manye noyſome humors of the liuer and milt. And the wormewood doth comfort both the ſtomache and liuer, and moueth an appetite to meate, and helpeth alſo thoſe diſeaſes proceeding of a ſtopping, like as the dropſie, and ſuch lyke diſeaſes. And it killeth the wormes in the belly, and doth mightilye expell them, by wearing a playſter prepared after thys manner: firſt take foure ounces of the wormewood, halfe an ounce of Euphorbium, one ounce of the Harts horne burnt, and to theſe mixe an ounce of a Hares gaule, and hony, which prepare in playſter forme, and apply to the belly. And he which is ſicke of an Ague a long time, let him drink the iuice of the wormewood tempered with ſugar, which doth helpe the ague in ſhort time after. And if any be ſo payned with the headeache, that he cannot ſleepe nor reſte, let him cauſe the wormewood to be finely bruſed and boyled wel in water, and put after into a fine linnen cloth, apply the ſame gently about the heade, and it wil both remoue the beating paines, and cauſe the patient ſweetely to ſleepe. And boyled in wine and drunke each day vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, doth preſerue the perſon, that the bloud putrifyeth not in the body. And the oyle of wormewoode dropped in the eares, doth reſtore hearing. And the wormewood boyled in vineger doeth amend the euil ſauour of the mouth, if the mouth be waſhed therwith. And the drinking therof doth put away ỹ ſwellings of the milte. And the wormwood boyled in oyle Oliue and annoynted about the breſt, doth both helpe the weakeneſſe of ſtomache, and the malice of the liuer. And the iuice of the wormewood, boyled with the iuice of Borage, and the floures of Centuarie, in Goates whey, and drunk, doth helpe thoſe diſeaſed of the ague, and griefes of the milte. And the wormewood ſodden in lye with Sothernwood, doth help the ſhedding of the haire. And for rawneſſe of the ſtomache take wormewood and herbe Grace, of eche a like waighte, and to theſe mixe a little pepper, beating them togither, and boyling them in wine, drinke of ſame, which doth greately comforte the ſtomache and purgeth it. And the wormewood layde among clothes, doth driue away mothes, and the often ſmelling vnto wormewood procureth ſleepe, or laying ỹ ſame vnder the boliſter, the partie not knowing therof. Theſe hitherto of the propertics of the wormewood.

Of

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secreats of the Sothernwood. Cap. xlviij.

And firste of the Sothernwood be two kindes, as Plinie and Dioscorides write, the one growing on the plaine, the other on the mountaine, and this they also meane to be the female, and the other the male, and bothe hauing a bitternesse like to the Wormewoode. And nowe the female (after Dioscorides) shooteth vp in stalke lyke a kinde of trée, and for that named of many, ẏ little Cipresse trée, bearing little white leaues about the small boughs or braunches, and those finely parted, like to the sea wormewoode, and hauing bigge yealowe berries in the toppe, whose sauour yéeldeth somewhat vnpleasant and bitter in taste. And the male beareth not so white leaues, being branched, with a small séede, and leafe like to the Fennel, shorter of growth, bearing in the toppe a yelowishe floure, and hauing like to the berries, hanging thicke togither on the toppe, and sauouring somewhat strong, and with one roote growing uéere in the earth. And neither of them can abide the long colde of the Winter, but that it withereth, and is muche harmed also by the long heate of the Sunne, when the same spreadeth it selfe in the toppe. And Theophrastus writeth, that it better prospereth, being set with the roote, or in branches slipped off, than sowne in the séede.

The Phisicke helpes.

The Sothernwood is hote in the firste degree and drye in the seconde, but Aegineta writeth, that it heateth and dryeth in the third degree, and hath the vertue of digesting & cutting asunder, although it doeth a little binde. And nowe the Southernwoodde burned and brought to pouder, and tempered with the oyle of Raddishe, & with the same annoynting the balde place of the head, doe cause the haire to growe. And the iuyce of the hearbe mixed with the oyle of Dyll, doeth the like, in causyng haire to growe in any place of the bodye. And the same hearbe doeth resolue imposlumes and fleumaticke humours, being boyled in a pot with the kernels of Quinces, and so applyed. And the iuyce pressed out of the Sonthernwood, and drunke

wine, doth defend the perſon from the Apoplexi. And the iuice anoin-ted on paſſie members, doth help them. And the Southernwood boy-led with oile Oliue, and annointing the heade therewith, doeth take away the vntemperate coldneſſe of the heade. And boyled with wine and ſugar, and drunke, doth heate the ſtomacke. And the hearbe boi-led with Parcely and ſugar, and drunke, doth both breake and expel the ſtone of the kidneis, and bladder. And the oyle of Southernwood annoynted beneath the nauil, doth cauſe vrine. And the hearb drunk in wine, helpeth againſt poyſons. And drunk in wine, helpeth againſt the bite of venomous beaſtes or wormes. And if any often drinketh of the roote of the hearbe, it killeth the wormes in the bodye, if the iuyce of the hearbe be mixed with a little milke, and drunke, it doth the like. And againſt the colde griefes of the lungs and breaſte, the hearbe is profitably giuen, being ſodden before with Iſope in wine and water, & ſweetned both with licoras and ſugar. And the hearbe bruſed with oyle and ſalt togither, and laide on Pulſes of the hand, is a profytable remedie againſt the ague. And a braunch of the herb (as Plinie writeth) laide vnder the bolſter, doeth moue the deſire to ỹ venerial acte, & doth alſo greatly auaile againſt al bewitchings, whi-che by ſo eating is hindred. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Southernwood.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecretes of the hearb Sauge. Cap. xlix.

And firſt the hearb Sauge is ſo common, that the ſame is growing in euery Garden. And nowe the hearbe is eyther ſowen in the ſeeds, or ſet in ſmall ſlips broken off, and wrythed at the ende, in the moneths of October, Nouember, Februarie, and March, in well laboured and dreſſed ground. And deſireth alſo to be couered aboute with bucked aſhes, for ſo it proſpe-reth, and commeth the ſaſter forwarde. And ioyeth beſides in a Sunny and open place. althoughe it may well abide the cold of al the winter throughe, without anye couer or defence ouer it at all. And it ioyeth to be ſette by the hearbe Rue, or hearbe Grace, and not in dunged earth, but in colde earth mixed with clay.

¶ The Phiſick helps.

Sauge healeth in the firſt degree, and dryeth in the ſeconde, and ỹ leaues (for the vſe of medicine) maye wel bee kepte for a yeare. And nowe the Sauge ſodden in wine and drunke, doeth ſtay the exceſſiue fluxes: and the termes ſtaying, it draweth them downe, but to muche

running

runnyng, it ſtayeth them. And the Sauge ſodden with Wormewood, and dzunke, doeth ſtaye the bloudy fixe. And the leaues and ſtalkes ſodden togither, and dzunke, do pzouoke vzine, and the termes. And the Sauge ſodden in wine, and either dzunk oz applied plaiſterwiſe, doth helpe the paſſey. And ſodden in water, helpeth the goute, and falling ſickneſſe, and eſpecially the dzopping of the vzine, beeyng dzunke and applied playſterwiſe to the belly. And a fomentation applyed with the licour of the decoction of the herb, doth help the ſtrāguric, & bloudy fixe, and cleanſeth the matrice. And the Sauge boyled in wine wyth the hearb named Taxus Barbatus, and ſitting ouer the hote bzeath of the ſame decoction, on a cloſe ſtoole, doeth ſo ſende vp the fundament fallen downe. And the iuyce of the Sauge myxed with hony, and waſhing filthy wounds therwith, doth ſo cleanſe them. And the leaues and ſtalkes ſodden in wine, & waſhing with the ſame, do helpe the itch of the pzuities. And ſitting ouer the hote bzeath of the decoction of the herb, doth take away the itch aboute the fundament. And the Sauge water (diſtilled at the time of bearing the floures) dzunke mozning and euening vnto the quantitie of two oz three ounces at a time, doeth amend the defaultes of the lyuer, putteth away the cough, and ſendeth fozth the dead yongling. And this water doth greatly helpe ſhzunke and aſtoniſhed members, if they bee bathed therewith: and this water dzunke doeth helpe the paines of the ſides, the ſhaking of the handes, and the palſie, and the like, if they be bathed with the water. And the water dzunk with wine, doth pzocure an appetite to meate, and ſtrengthneth the ſtomache, and womens places. And the ſame water dzunke mozning and euening, vnto the quantitie of thzee oz foure ounces at a time, doth bzeake any inward impoſtume, comfozteth the bzaine, and taketh away the diſtillings of the heade, comfozteth a hotte lyuer, and putteth awaye frenſineſſe. And the water with Peacocks dung, doeth ſtaye the freſhe bleedyng wound, being bound about with Moſſe and Cotten. Theſe hitherto of the pzoperties of the hearb Sauge.

Of the ordering and care of the Purſelane. Cap. lj.

AND firſt the Purcelane may be ſowen in any time and ſeaſon in a manner: yet the ſame rather ſpzingeth vp, when ỹ warme ſeaſon beginneth, as in the moneths of Apzill, May, & June. And the ſéedes may either be ſowen alone in earth well mixed with pouder duſt, oz among other hearbs, if you will, in that they well pzoſper and come vp, by growing among onions and léekes. Alſo they deſire to be ſowne in a fatte ground, foz by that meanes they growe and ware the bigger. And where the Séedes ſhall once be ſowen, there will they euery

euery yeare after come vp of their owne accorde, eſpecially bæ-ing ſuffered to growe vnto a bigge turffe and perfite ripeneſſe. And the Purſelane alſo is muche harmed by a long drought, vnleſſe it be otherwiſe holpen, with the often watering in that ſeaſon. And note, that the Purſelane growing vnder the ſhadowe of træs, will come to no turffes.

¶ The Phiſick helpes.

Purſelane is cold in the thirde degree, and moiſt in the ſeconde, and the freſhe and greene more allowed than the drie, whiche hath then little vertue. And nowe the eating of the greene Purſelane, doth helpe a hote ſtomack, and the ſwelling of the mouth of the ſtomacke. And the Purſelane boyled and holden in the mouth, doeth ceaſe the paine of the teeth. And a plaiſter made of the Purſelaine, and laide on hote vlcers, where it is found, that the matter in them putrifyeth, and the lyke, if the impoſtame ſhal be hotte, and that it wandreth from one member to another. And the Purſelane taketh away the vlcers of the heade, if the ſame be bruſed and tempered with wine, and the heade waſhed therewith. And the often eating of it rawe, doth fyl the ſtomacke with clammy humours, but eaten rawe wyth vineger, doth putte awaye the burning of the ague.

And bruſed with barley meale, and after applyed hote to the ſtomacke, doeth qualifie the heate therof. And the eating of the Purſelane doth ſoone ſtaye the monethly courſes without harme. And ꝑ Purſelane bruſed and mired with barley floure, and the ſame layde plaiſterwiſe, doeth ceaſe the paines of the heade, qualifyeth the heat of the eyes, ſtayeth the flixe of the belly, and eſpecially the bloudye ſcouring, and ſtrengthneth beſides the raines and bladder. And the iuyce drunke, doth helpe the burning ague, killeth the wormes in ꝑ belly, and helpeth the ſpitting of bloude in the body. And againſte the coſtiuenеſſe of the belly, ſeeth the herbe in water wyth prunes and the ſame eate togither. and drinke after water. And Auicen writeth, that the Purſelane draweth vppe Warts of propertie, if they be annoynted with the iuyce therof. And the herbe bruſed and laid plaiſterwiſe, doth help the holy fire. And the herb holden vnder the tongue, doth put awaye thirſt. Theſe hytherto of the properties of the Purſelane.

Of

Of the ordering, and care of the Peny Royall. Cap. lj.

AND the Peny Royall is an hearbe well knowen to all perſons, and loveth in the growing with Peppe and Mintes, & the female is of more effect, as Plinie writeth, and beareth a purple floure, but the male a white floure. And nowe Palladius willeth, the Penyroyall to be ſette in the beginning of the Moneth of March in earth well laboured and dreſſed, without any dunging at all, and rather in a moyſt place, where it more loveth, as ſome do write.

The Phiſick helpes.

The Peny royall is hote and dre in the third degree, and doth alſo heate and decoct mightily, ſo that it maketh the perſon eating & drinking thereof, the eaſyer to caſt and ſpit forth the clammy matter from the lungs and breaſt. And the Penyroyal is then to be gathered when it beareth the floures, for that they may after be kepte for two yeares. And againſt the itch of the body, boyle the Penyroyal in water, and waſhing the itching places therewith, it doth ſpeedily heale them.

And ſodden in wine and drunke, it doth ſend downe the monthly courſes, and the like the after burden. And bruſed with hony & ſalte and that layde plaiſterwiſe, doeth helpe the paſſie and broken members.

And the Penye royall bruſed and eaten with honny, doth helpe the hardneſſe of fetchyng breath. And againſte the gripings of the bowels, take two partes of wine, and a third part of the herb boyled togyther, and ſo drinke the ſame. And he whych is dayly moued to much ſleepe, let him take the freſh Peny royal, and holde the ſame vnder the tong, and in the mouth, & thus often vſing the freſhe herbe, ſhall ſo driue away the deſire of ſleepe. And the pouder of the Pennyroyall drunke in wine, for two dayes togither, at night going to bed doth helpe the griefe of the liuer and lungs. And the pouder of the herbe or ſeedes taken in an egge, doth help the rawneſſe of the ſtomache, and the caſting of it.

And if any by ouer much bleeding is bereft of minde: let this herb be applyed with vineger to the Nolethrils, and it will both refreſhe, and reſtore the perſon. And the teeth rubbed with the pouder of this herbe doth put away the griefe and paine of them. And the hearbe bruſed and tempered with Saffron, and annoynted, doeth helpe, the

cuil vlcers of the body, & especially those which aryse about ẏ nailes of the fingers. And the herbe brused and applyed playsterwyse, doth assuage the swelling of the milt. And drunke warme in wine, doeth helpe the dropping of the bladder: and the same wine with the herbe boyled in oyle, and applyed to the belly, doth worke the same effect. And the pennyroyall sodden in wine, and applyed twice or thrice to Nosethrils, doth helpe the reume and distilling of the heade. And the wine of the decoction of the herbe, and drye figs drunke, doth helpe the cold cough, proceeding of clammie and watrie humours. These hitherto of the properties of the Pennyroyal.

Of the ordering, care, and secrets of the Artichockes. Cap. lij.

And first the Artichocke groweth like in the heade vnto ẏ Pine apple: which ought to be sowen or set in the earth in the moneth of March. Palladius willeth the earth before to be wel dunged & labored, for that it better ioyeth in a fat ground. And the sœdes set in fast grounde, do greatly auayle agaynst the casting vp of the Mole and other beastes, in that they cannot so easily make houles in the grounde. And Palladius also willeth, that when your beddes be thus dressed and prepared in a readinesse, that then to set the sœdes in the earth halfe a foote asunder: and this especiallye oughte to be done in the increase of the Moone: and that holding the sœdes with thrée of your fingers, you sette them so dœpe in the earth (as vnto the first ioynts) and couer them lightly with earth, and water thē often, if a hote season ensue. For by that meanes they sende forth both tenderer and fuller fruites, as Varro writeth. And when the yong plants be somewhat sprong vp, then oughte they dayly to be wéeded, and their withered leaues plucked away, and to be well dunged about with store of ashes, after ẏ minde of Columella. For that the same kinde of dung (as hée writeth) is aptest, and best agréeth to this hearbe. And béeware you set not the sœdes turned vpside downe in the earth, for on such wise they will sende forth féeble, crooked, and verye small Artichockes, as writeth Palladius. And the Artichocks will growe without prickles, if that the sharp endes be pressed downe, or made blunt by rubbing them on a stone, before the

the setting in the earth. And certaine writers affirme, that if ỳ vpper skin of the rote of the Lettuce be pared of, and that the rote afterwarde be shred into very small peces, and that into eth pece cut, a sede be put, and so couered in the earth, of such a depth abouesayde, which after will grow without prickles: & they will grow swete and pleasaunt, if that the sedes (three dayes before) be steped in anye swete smelling lycour, and after the drying in the ayre, set so deepe in the earth as abouesayde. For by that meanes they sende forth Artichockes of the same taste (which the licour was) in which the sedes were soked: and of this they wil sauour and taste of the Bayes, if that you stape the sedes with Bay leaues, or put of the sedes into Bay berries, and set them into the grounde. And a practise may be vsed (if you will) in the ordering on such wise, of all other sedes. And to make Artichokes also grow swete in tast, infuse the sedes before, in eyther milke with hony, or in water with sugar, or else in pleasant wine, and after the drying, sette them orderly in earth. And many do couer the leaues wel with the earth in the beginning of Winter, to cause them to tourne white, and to take awaye their bitternesse, the better to serue with meates in the Winter time. And Palladius affirmeth of experience, that the yong plants of the Artichokes: set among yong wheate in the end of October, to growe vp with ỳ same, will the better prosper, than by the setting of them in beddes alone. And certaine auntient men wil, that the whole plantes be plucked vp, with the endes of the rotes left in the earth, or cut off in the ends with some sharp hooke, and that these rotes so cut or broken off, be dipped in dung, and set againe in earth well laboured and dressed with old dung, a three fote asunder, for the better increase of the plantes. And if nede so require, for the heate of the season, then to water the plants, vntil they haue sufficiently taken rote in the ground. And the Artichoks are not to be gathered altogither, for that they ripen not all at once, but ripen the one after the other. And they also are then to be gathered, when they haue as yet floures in the neather parte, rounde aboute like to a Garlande, and not

when all the floures be fallen off, for then they be worser. And euery yeare the yong plants ought daily to be plucked vp from the olde, for feare of hindring the yelde of the olde, and the yõg new sette in other places further asunder. And there be some Authors whiche will, that the yong plantes be plucked vppe, with some parte of the rote. And those plantes which you preserue for seedes, ought first to be clensed from al the yong ones growing about, & couered ouer with some potsharde or barke, for that the seeds through the burning of the Sunne, & shoures of the raine corrupting, do vtterly perish and come to nothing. And the Mice and Rats do greatly couet to fede on the rotes of the Artichokes, and if they once taste of the rotes, or otherwise be moued to come vnto them, then gather they after in greate companies vnto the place, and that comming a greate way off, so much do they delight in the sauour and tast of those rotes. Wherfore, to auoyde the resorte & cõming of them vnto the rotes, then take (as Varro willeth) either swines dung, lapping the same about the rotes, or els fig ashes, strawing thẽ in like sorte about the rotes, which so will driue them away.

The Phisicke helps.

The Artichoh eaten raw, doth amende the sauour of the mouth, and the prickle partes like to the Pine apple kernels, sodden tender and boyled after with butter and vineger, and seasoned with salt, be greatly commended. And some delighte in eating of them rawe, and finde a pleasantnesse in the eating, if they be prepared with pepper, salt, and the fine poulder of Coliander seedes strawed vpon. And sliced in wyne, or rather sodden in wine, and eaten, doth not only moue or cause vrine, but procure the venerial act. And the same sodden in water and eaten, doth strengthen the stomacke, and procure a more earnest desire both of man and woman, by eating both at one time of the same. And Galen affirmeth, the Artichoke to bee then harde of digestion and hurtful to the stomacke, when the same is grown vnto the shedding quite of all the floures of the head, although some write when it commeth to the bearing of floures, at what time the vpper ones (as they write) do not only waxe dry of moysture, but hard and rough of skynne, and haue also more plentie of the cholericke iuyce. And of this they are rather to be sodden than rawe, and yet the yong ones being full of iuyce, may safely be eaten rawe, being prepared in the like order as about is taught. These hitherto of the properties of the Artichoke.

Of

¶ Of the ordering, care, and ſecrets of the Leekes. Cap. liij.

AND firſt the Lékes ought be ſowen in a battle ground, and eſpecially in a plaine lowe place, as writeth Palladius, and that the beddes be leuell, high caſte vp, wel laboured, and orderly dunged. And ỳ vnſet Lékes, after two moneths ſowing ought to be cut as they growe, for that as Columella wryteth, they ware the bigger, and continue the longer. And the better alſo they will proſper, if after euerye remouing and ſetting againe, the blades be cut, and how often they be cut, ſo often to be euen watered and dunged. And this alſo learne, that the bigger the heades growe, ſo muche the further diſtant, as commonly four fingers aſunder they ought to be ſet, and after the growing the blades, then to be cut. Alſo the often watering dunging, plucking vp of the wéedes, growing neare to them, and the often remouing, do greatly further their increaſe. And when you minde to haue the heades of the Lékes grow big, then before the ſetting againe, cut awaye all the ſmall hearie rootes, and vnder the heades lap eyther pot ſhardes, or Oyſter ſhelles, betwéene the heades and the earth, and after couer ech head ſo ordered with earth, and by that meanes the heads will growe the bigger, ſo that you do not then water them, after the minde (of the Gréeke) Sotion. And Palladius writeth the like on this wiſe, that whē the Lékes be grown a finger bigneſſe, and that the blades be halfe cutte awaye, that then ỳe ſet the heades agayne, in newe and ſoft Cow dung, foure fingers aſunder, eche from other. And when the Lékes haue gotten ſome ſtrength of roote in the Earthe, then wyth youre forked dibble, put vnder the heade, lowſe it ſo in the earthe, that the heade maye ſo ſéeme to hang in the Earth, and the heade by that meanes finding ſuche large emptineſſe vnder it, will after growe out, and fyll that emptineſſe.

And further, if you deſire onely to haue vnſet Lékes, then ſow your ſéedes the thicker togither, but if bigge in the heads,

then ſow your ſéedes the thinner, and dayly in a manner wéede them, and féede them with ſoft cow dung. And the ſéedes alſo may be ſowen, in the moneths of March, Aprill, Maye, and all June: But remoued and ſet againe after the minde of Palladius, in the moneth of July, Auguſt, September, and October, will well ſerue the moneths of March, and Aprill following, being as aboueſayde new dunged in the ſetting, and watered. And both the Gréeke Sotion, Columella, & Palladius do write, that if many ſéedes of the Léekes be tyed vp togither, and ſowne after watered, then wil al the ſéeds in an heape togither, grow vp into one maruellous bigge Léeke righte wonderous to beholde. And the like to this maye you trie if you will by the ſéedes of any other plant. And not vnlike vnto the aboueſayd, may be cauſed, if that into the head of a Léeke you put a Rape ſéede (the hole before being bored with a wooden pricke, for that killeth the heade) and then ſet orderlye as is aboueſayde, doth ſo grow into a maruellous bigneſſe, as writeth the afore ſayde Palladius. Columella writeth, that the heade of a Léeke bored with the pointe of a wodden pricke or ſmall Réede, or elſe by any other meanes a hole opened without yron, and putting into the ſame hoale a gourde ſéede, in the ſteade of Rape ſéede taught afore, and ordering of the Léeke (as aboueſayde) will afterwarde grow into a maruellous bigneſſe. And there is yet another waye taughte of certaine others, whiche will that ſo many ſéedes be put into a thinne Réede, as a man may aptly take vp with three of his fingers, and that ſet orderly into the ground. And of theſe ſéedes togither will procéede the like bigge plant, as is aboueſayde. And Columella willeth that after the ſowing of your ſéedes, and that couered with the earth, to treade the earth cloſe vpon them with the foote, and to do no worke after them, vntill three dayes be paſt, and in ỹ fourth day to ſprinckle your ſéedes with water, vnleſſe they be in the meane time watered by rayne, for by that meanes, (ſayth he) they will ſauour muche better. And when in ſowing or planting, you mixe ſande with the earth, th n wil the léekes growe and yéelde the plentifuller. And to take awaye the

ſtrong

ſtrong breath and ſmell of the eatyng of Lékes, chawe then Cummine in the mouth, and the ſame wil take away the ſtrōg ſmell, although you had eaten a large handefull of the Lékes at one time. And Petrus Creſcentius writeth, that the ſéedes of the Lékes poured into wine, doe not ſuffer the wine after to ſower, but that the vinegre they reſtore vnto the naturall taſte and ſmel of wine, taking away by that meanes all the tartneſſe and ſharpeneſſe thereof. And Nero Cæſar, ſo greatly commendeth vnſet Lékes, that eating of them euerye daye with oyle, ſhall after cauſe a cleare voyce to ſing, eyther priuately or publikely. And laſte, this by experience is founde, that the Léke commeth vp, after ỹ eightéene daye ſowing, & groweth vnto two yeres end, and after that falleth to ſéeding, and ſo dyeth.

The Phiſicke helpes.

The Leeke of the Garden dryeth in the ſecond degree, and heateth in the third, and the ſeedes may wel be kept three yeares. And now the Leeke bruſed and mixed with ſalt, and that layde on cuyll puſches, doth heale them. And the Leeke brought to pouder, and tempered with the Oyle of Roſes, and Vinegre, and dropped into the eares, doth put awaye the paynes of them, and the ſelfe ſame taken, doth help the toothache, and yet the Garden Leeke by often eating, doth harme both to the ſtomache and eyes, and much more the wylde Leeke. For the eating of the Leeke doth fill the body with winde, & therfore it ought twice to be ſodden in water, before the eating with meate, in that the malice of it is qualifyed. And the Leeke alſo draweth downe the termes, cauſeth vrine, and procureth a ſuperfluous heate. And the iuyce of the Leeke drunke with womans milke, doeth helpe an olde cough, and the bliſters of the lungs, and ỹ ſame drunk, doth help the ſpitting of bloud. And for the caſting or vomiting vp of olde bruſed bloud, take two drāms of the iuyce of the Leeke, with ỹ like quantitie of the fine pouder of the gaule, and the Olibanum, mixing them togither, which after drunke, and it doth greatly helpe. And the ſame mixture applyed to the Noſethrils, doth ſtay the bleeding at the noſe. And eating of the Leeke raw, doth cauſe vomiting, and is contagious, yet the ſame putteth awaye drunkenneſſe if it be eaten rawe, and a plaiſter made of the Leeke with hony, and that layde on broken or ſpoyled members, doth both aſſuage the ſwelling, and conſume the clotted bloud. And againſt the paynes of the hips, drinke ỹ iuyce of the Leeke, and it wil eaſe the ſame: and the iuyce doth eſpecially heale ſuch wounds which be cold and putrified, if the ſame be poured into woundes, and eateth away rotten fleſhe of the wounds.

And

and the iuyce mixed with the rootes of white Lilies, and annoynted on the hips, doth put away the payne of them. And the often eating of the Leeke doth cauſe headach, burdeneth the ſtomack, cauſeth the thirſte, and inflameth the bloud. And the iuyce mixed with ſalt, and ꝑ layd on the freſh woundes, doth vnclooſe them. And the eating of the Leeke, procureth the deſire to the veneriall act. And the iuyce of the Leeke drunke in wine, doth helpe an old cough, and the dropſie. And againſt the mightie paynes of the heade, take two parts of the iuyce, with a third part of honny, that drop eyther into the noſethrilles, or eares, and it will greatly help. And the vnſet Leekes ſodden in good white wine, with May Butter, and that layde playſterwyſe on the belly, ſo hot as the patient may well abyde it, and at the cooling of ꝑ apply another hot playſter, and this do the third & fourth time together, if neede ſhal ſo require, whych without doubt wil greatlye eaſe the colliche. And the water of the rootes diſtylled in June, drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitye of two ounces at a tyme, doth greatly helpe ſuch which ſpyt bloud, and helpeth barraine women by often drinking therof, and the water ſtayeth the great bleeding at the noſe, if fine Cotten be dypped in water, and that put vp into the Noſethilles. And the ſame water drunke, doth helpe the coſtyue Belly, helpeth the payne of the hippes, purgeth the Kidneys & Bladder, cauſeth vrine, and ſendeth forth the ſtone. And the water ſpeedily helpeth woundes, if they be waſhed morning and euening wyth it. And the ſame water doth greatly helpe vnto the exulceration and fracture of womens priuie places, which ſometimes happeneth after the byrth of bigge ponglyngs, if they be bathed or waſhed wyth the ſame water morning and euening. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Leeke.

¶ Of the ordering, care and ſecretes of the Garden Onion. Cap. liiij.

And firſt the Onion through the bigneſſe of the heade, and number of the cartilages, with the which the bodye is included, was of the auntient huſbandmen ſo named. And nowe as touching the condition of the ground, and maner of ſowing the ſeedes, you ſhal vnderſtand that the ſame ought to be done, in a fatte ground, labourouſly digged vp, dunged and watered, and the earth alſo neare red, as writeth the Greeke Sotion. Alſo the ground where you minde to ſowe your ſeedes, ought to be caſt vp, and to lye open all the winter through, that it may ſo be nipped and bytten of the frooſtes, and the weedes killed, and after that to be dunged, and that erth caſt leuel into beds,

iii

in which doing, pluck vp and caſt away all manner of weedes, and rootes, that you finde. And when you haue thus handled & ordered your earth, then in the moneth of Marche, in a calme and fayre daye, the winde then blowing out of the South, or Eaſt, ſowe ordeine your ſeedes, with herbe Sauerye among them, for ſo they proſper the better, as writeth Plinie. And when they come vp, you muſt diligentlye weede them for three or foure dayes togither, and as Palladius willeth, your beddes ought to be thrice digged vp finely, and plaine raked ouer, before the ſowing of the ſeedes. And now after the yong plantes be ſprong vp, and that you would haue your Onions to grow bigge in the heades, and not to beare ſeedes, then muſte you breake of the greene blades, that the iuyce may ſo goe to the rootes, or elſe breake of, and cut away both the blades and ſmal hearie rootes, before the ſetting againe in the earth, for ſo they will growe the bigger in the heades, as writeth the Greeke Sotion. And this learne, that the ſeedes ſowen in the waine of the Moone, come vp both ſmaller, and ſowrer, but thoſe ſeedes ſowen in the increaſe of the Moone, ſpring vp the bigger and ſweeter.

And this alſo is not to be ouerpaſſed, that in all the kinds of the Onions, the longer in faſhion is ſowrer than the rounde: and the reddiſh ſowrer than the white: and the drye, than the greene: and raw than the ſodden: and the freſhe, than that ſeaſoned with ſalt, or ſodden. And farre bigger will the heads bee, if after their remouing, they be ſet againe into beds, lying open for twentye dayes before, and that well turned in with dung, and ſo long dryed vntill the moyſture be almoſte ſpente, after the minde of the learned Sotion. And ſome plucke of the vpper ſkinne, leauing them bare, and ſo ſet them againe in the earth. And thus ſetting again, they ought to be placed a hand bredth, or ſomewhat more aſunder, that they may the better proſper. And thoſe whiche you minde to eate before the full ripeneſſe, ought to be ſet in beddes where Cucumbers, or gourdes and Melons be. And in their growing to be often digged aboute, watred and weeded, for ſo they proſper the better, as writeth

Palladius. And when they be growen and ſhot vp into high ſtems, then muſt their weake bodies be ſtayed vp with ſmall proppes, leaſte their long ſmall neckes, bente muche downewarde with the blaſte of windes, and the heades alſo often knocking or beating togither through blowing of the winds, ſhoulde ſo ſhake forthe and leeſe muche ſeede. And the time alſo of gathering the heades, as Columella and Palladius, teach, is when the ſeedes appeare blache of colour. And further Sotion the Greeke writeth, that the Onions will laſte a long time, if that before their laying or hanging vp, they bee layde or put for a ſeaſon in warme water, or elſe as Plinie willeth, to be infuſed in warme and ſaltie water for a ſeaſon, and after laide to drie in the Sun vntil they be through drye, and after couered with Barley ſtraw: and in ſuche wiſe they ought to be layde in the ſtrawe, that the one touche not the other. And ſome hang them in the ſmoke, and Chimney, neare to the heate of the fire, and do likewiſe continue a long tyme. And to make Onions growe of a marueilous bigneſſe in the heades, cloſe to the ſeedes of them, with the ſeedes of ẏ gourd in the beſt dung, and mixe the earth diligently with them in ẏ putting into the earth. And you may cauſe them alſo to growe of the ſame bigneſſe, if that rayſing vp the earth about them, you doe leaſe the earthe hollowe vnder the heades as before is taught of the ordering of the Leekes. Alſo you maye cauſe the like heades, if boring certaine holes you put into them of the ſeedes of the Gourd, ſetting them ſo into the earth. And there be alſo huſbandmen, which will the ſeedes of the Onions to be then gathered, when as the pillings of the heade be halfe drie, and that they be after throughly dried in the Sunne. And here learne, that certain antient writers (as Plinie and others) will that both the onions and Garlike ſhoulde be ſowen neare to ſweete ſmelling floures, to cauſe them ſauour and ſmel ẏ ſweeter. And thoſe Onions which you minde to plucke vp, to keepe a long time, ought to be done in the waxing or decreaſe of ẏ Mone. And further learne, that Palladius willeth the yong Onions, to be ſet againe in Februarie, but ſowen in the ſeedes,

both

both sowen in the spring, and Haruest. And yet many auntient husbandmen will the sædes to be sowen in the monethes of December, Januarie, Februarie, and March. Also to be sown either alone, or in beds with other herbes, and after they bee somewhat come vp, then to be remoued and thinner set, as a span asunder. And if the earth in the same yeare, shall not bee dunged, then in the sowing time following, it ought to be dunged: for the better increase, and plentifuller growing. And those Onions be counted better, which be set in the moneth of August, for that in the yeare following, they may so sende forthe their sædes. But those Onions be counted worser whiche bee set greene in the Lent time.

And to conclude, those Onions be thought to kepte the better and longer time, which be gathered and plucked vp in the increase of the Moone, and being then a calme and cleare daye, and after layde to drye, in a shadowie place. And the sædes may well be kept for one whole yeare.

The Phisicke helps.

Onions be hot and moyst in the thirde degree: and heate also in ỹ fourth degree, as witnesseth Galen. And of this often eating of ỹ raw Onyons, doth cause a rough throte, winde in the stomache, and the headach. And the Onyon mixed with honny, doth take away ỹ griefe of an euil stomache: and yet the eating of them, doth harme the members, for that they drie ouermuch the moysture of the body, but tempered with vynegre and layde on pricks, they do then open them. And the eating of them, doth soften the belly, and causeth thirst. And the iuyce of the Onion, mixed with hony, doth amende the sighte and the pyn and the web, if the same be often dropped into the eyes. And against paines of the breast, take the Onions rosted vnder ymbers, & eate them morning and euening: which by that meanes, causeth easie spitting vp of humours, and looseth the breast: and in the same manner it purgeth away swelling and purgeth the stomache. And the Onyon bruised, and mixed with salte and honnye, and that layde on wartes, doth make them fall of by the rootes. And the Onions bruised with vinegre, if the scabbed shinne be washed with the same, doe heale and make the shinne faire. And the eatyng them rawe, doeth cause lothsomenesse vnto the stomache, and eating also of them doeth take away the stincke of the mouth.

And the iuyce of it drawen vp into the noſethrils, doeth purge the heade: and againſt the bit of a mad dog, take the iuyce of the Onion with the iuyce of Rue or herbe Grace, and hony, with the ſame annoint the place. And the often eating of Onyons, doeth harme the collericke, for that they cauſe them to be both hotter and dryer. But the flegmaticke perſons, the Onions ſeldome harme, for that they cutte in ſunder, and conſume the ſuperfluous humours in them.

And the iuyce of the Onyon mixed with Capons greaſe, and annoynted on rawe heeles, or ſleepy gaules, doth ſoone heale them. And the iuyce dropped into mattre and running eares, and after ſeething them in ſalt broth, with other good ſpyces, is then profitable to the ſtomache, and cauſe a better nouriſhment. And the Onyon bruſed with hony, and that layde playſterwiſe on any wounde, doeth heale them. And the yong tender Onions, eaten with hony, doe maintayne healthe. And the Onion roſted in the hotte embers, and eaten with Pyle, doth helpe the cough. And the iuyce mixed with womens milk, and dropped into the eares, doth helpe the payne and noyſe of them. And the iuyce of the Onyon drunke wyth the iuyce of Fennel, doeth helpe the dropſie. And the iuyce drunke with Rue, and honnye, doeth greatly helpe the heaue ſleepineſſe and forgetfulneſſe: and the iuyce alſo mixed with Reaſons, and Figges, and that layde playſterwiſe on impoſtumes, doth both breake, and draw them.

And the eating of the Onyon, doth cauſe fearefull Dreames, eſpecially to ſuch lately cropen out of a ſickeneſſe. And ſome write that the aſhes of the willow mixed with vineger, and that layde on warts, doth get them vp by the rootes. And laſt, the Onyon accuſtomed to be eaten morningly, and that yong and tender, doth of labouring and huſbandmen, doth greatly maintaine their health, and preuayleth ẏ like to them againſt the infection of the ayre, by eating them with ſalte and breade, for ſo they leſſe harme the heade. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Onyons.

Of the ordering, care, and ſecrets of the Garlike. Cap. lv.

AND firſt the leſſer Garlyke, muſte be ſowen or ſet in the ridges of beds in the moneth of September and Nouember, and rayſed ſomewhat highe, that ſet in beddes it maye the leſſe be harmed with Wintry waters. And therefore you ſhall make ſundrye little furrowes in youre beddes like to ſuche whiche be made in the fieldes to auoyde the moyſture and rayne.

And

And in the higher places alſo ſet your Cloues (pluckt of from the heades) foure fingers aſunder, and not déeper than the middle ioynte, that they may the better come vp. And when thée leaues are ſprong vp, then wéede aboute them: for the oftner you do thus wéede them, the bigger they will ware in ẏ heads. And if you will haue them big in the heades, then treade them flat downe, after the faſtning and tying togither of the grẽne blades: which you muſt do, when as the blades be ſomewhat come vp, and not growen vnto a ſtalke, that ſo the iuyce maye returne to the heades. And Palladius willeth, the Garlike to be ſowen either in Ianuarie, or Nouember, in a white ground wel digged and laboured, but not dunged, and in a warme day, and that the earth be then indifferent dryе: for by that meanes, will the ſéedes proſper the better and come forwarde. And yet Plinie writeth, that the ſéedes ſowen do ſlowly come vp: for that in the firſte yeares growth, they be no bigger than the Léekes in the heades. And in the ſecond yeare, they come diuided, but in the thirde yeare the heades be growen vnto perfite bigneſſe. And further (there be certaine others) whiche wyll that the ſéedes of the Garlike be ſowen in the monethes of September, October, Februarie, & March and in hot countries in the moneth of December. And Palladius writeth, that if any happen to be left in the earth, when they be ripe, then thoſe remayning do after renue both in the rotes and leaues, & ſende forth their ſéedes in the yeare following, whiche may be ſowen and bring forth the Garlike. And beſides Palladius willeth, that when the Cloues be thus ſet on the ridges of the beddes, in a white earthe, well laboured and dreſſed without dung, and that they be ſhotte vp in ſtemmes, which beare the ſéedes, thẽ at theyr appearance of thoſe ſtemmes, to treade the blades flat to the earth, kéeping them downe, that the blades ſhote not into an heigth, whiche by the often treading of thẽ downe will cauſe the iuyce to returne vnto the Cloues, and make ſo mighty a head.

And further, Plinie, Sotion the Grécke, Palladius, and diuerſe other auntient men write, that if the Cloues of the

Garlike be set in the earth when the Mone is vnder the earth and the heades plucked vp when the like wise is set vnder the earth, that then the strength of the sauour of them will bee so small, that the breath of the eaters of them, shall scarcelye bee felt. And not vnlike to thys doth Columella write, that if the cloues be set in the beds, the Mone being then vnder the earth, and the heades plucked vp, at the change of the Mone, that the sauour of them wyll be greately abated. And the Gracke Sotion writeth, that you maye make the Garlike heades sauour sweeter, if that you mixe the kernels of the Olines bruised with the Cloues, and set them togither in the earthe, or gentlye breaking flatte the sharpe endes of the Cloues, you sette them so into the Earthe, or else in the setting you mixe the Lées of the Oyle Olyue with the Cloues of the Garlike.

And Didimus writeth, that the strong sauour gotten by eating of the Garlike, is putte awaye by the only eating of a grene Beane or two. And others write, that the rote of the Bétes, rosted vnder the hote ymbers, and eaten, doeth put away the strong breath and smell of the Garlike. And certaine late practisioners write, that if the eaters of the Garlike doe eate of the grene Parcely, that the same do shortly after, take away the lothsome smell thereof. And many of the auntient writers affirme, that the Garlike heades will continue the longer, and serue the better to vse afterwarde, if that they bé afterwarde either buried or couered in chaffe, or hanged vppe in the smoke. And there bée some, whiche will that the heades of Garlyke, be a little whiles steped in warme salt water, and after the drying, to be hanged vp, or couered, which so doeth cause them to last the longer. But in this or that maner vsed, they become after the setting barraine of yelde, for the more parte. And sufficient it is, that the Garlike heades be dryed ouer the fire, that they may not spring or growe afterwardes. And Plinie writeth, that those heades of the Garlyke, be of a lower taste, which haue the more cloues: and he also affirmeth, that the Garlike heades will haue no stronger sauour or smel

after

after the sæthing, then the Onions haue after their sæthing. And Palladius writeth, that the Garlike heades ought then to be plucked vp, when the stalkes ware drye and fæble: and this especially do, in the waine of the Moone, and in a clesre daye and dry season. And Democritus (in his husbandrye) wryteth, that if you minde to drine the small Byrdes from the eatyng and spoyling of your fruites, and not to come neare them, then take the Garlike heades, and hang sundry on diuers branches of trées.

The Phisicke helpes.

Garlike is hot and drye in the fourth degree, and hath the vertue of consuming, dissoluing and expellyng poyson. And against the bite of venomous beasts and wormes take the Garlike, brusing ỹ same, and after apply that plaisterwise on the byte. And of this named the husbandmens triacle. And against wormes in the body take Garlike, with the iuyce of the Parcely and Mintes, whiche mixe with a little vineger and pepper, and making thereof a sauce, vse to eate of the same, with breade, or meate. And for the cholliche, and paynes of the reyns, seeth the Garlyche in wine and pyle, whiche applying plaisterwise on the belly, and round about the roote of the yard, doth greatly helpe the same. And by eating of Garlike, a man may the safelyer go into a suspected ayre, and by stinching places, bycause the strong sauour of it for the season doth put away all other noysome sauours and stinckes. And a Garlyche Clene holden in the mouth, doth ceasse the paine and ache of a tooth, if the same proceede of acolde cause. And Sirapio writeth a marueilous matter, that although the eating of Garlike, doth harme the whole and perfect sight of the eyes, yet he affirmeth, that the moysture of it doth comforte a dull sight. And here learne that the Garlike hath certaine euil properties, whyche be these, it maketh inflamation, dryeth and harmeth the stomacke, causeth thirst, and layde to the skinne (in any place) it rayseth vppe blysters if it lyeth twelue houres space. And therefore the often eating of it doth harme collerick, in that the Garlike doth inflame thē, and dryeth the whole body, especially in a hote season, and engendereth beside the leapre in them, causeth also frenzincsse, hurteth the sight, and moueth headach: and in consideration hereof, the collerick ought to take heede of the often eating of Garlike, and chiefely in ỹ latter ende of the Spring, the Sommer, and hote season of the Haruest, bicause it doth then sooner engender the red choller, and increaseth the adust matter. Also it doth more harme, being eaten raw, thā sodden or rosted. And yet the eating of Garlike moderately in the Wynter tyme, is right profitable to the flegmaticke persons.

And further, the Garlike rosted vnder the hote ymbers, and brused

sed

sed with figs and barrowes grease, and that applyed playsterwise, doth breake a colde impostume which is long ere it be ripe. And the Garlike eaten, putteth awaye the inwarde swelling of the bodye, softneth and openeth impostumes (as abouesaid) and draweth forth the matter. And the heade annoynted with the iuyce of Garlike, doth kyll both the nittes and lyce. And the Garlike drunke with the decoction of the Organy, doth also kil the nits and lyce of the head. And the ashes of the Garlike mixed with hony, and that annoynted on thinne places of the heade, doeth helpe the sheading of the haire. And the same ointment amendeth the foulnesse or filthinesse of the skinne. And the ashes of the Garlike, doth helpe the vlcers open, by sprinckling them vpon. And the ashes of the Garlike wrought togyther with hony and May butter, and annoynted on the grieued places, doeth make the skinne smooth, if the same bee either infected with the scab or leaprie, so that the annoynting be done, after the bathing in the hote house. And as moste Authors do write, the often eating of Garlike, doth greatly harme and dull the sight of ye eyes. And yet the Garlike sodden and eaten, doeth cause a cleare voyce, helpeth an olde cough, purgeth the colde breast, and dryeth vppe the moysture of the stomacke. And the Garlike (with the leaues and al) sodden in wine and drunke, doeth not onely procure vrine, but moueth downe the termes, and draweth downe also the after burden, if the belly be annoynted with the same. And a smoke also made of the Garlyke, may do the like, if the woman sytte ouer it, on a close chayre for the purpose. And the sauour of the Garlike, doth driue away all venomous wormes. And if any stinged of an Adder do eate of the Garlike, he shall not after bee harmed of stinging: nor if he hath drunke poyson, he shall after feele no harme. And Garlike sodden with vinegre, and drunk with that and hony mixed togither, named Mulse, doth after sende forth the flat and broade wormes, and any other venomous worme crept into the belly.

And the Garlike sodden with oyle Oliue, and annointed, doth asswage the swellings, and other griefes of the bladder. And the Garlike sodden with Centory in wine, and drunke, doeth helpe the dropsie gathered of a colde cause. And the Garlike brused with the Coliander seedes, and so taken in wine, doth assuage the paynes of the ioyntes, and openeth the straightnesse of making water. And the Garlike sodden with Beanes, and brused, and after tempered wyth oyle Oliue, or oyle of Poppye, and an ointment made of the same, with the which annointing on the temples, do greatly help the headache. And the Garlike sodden, and after rosted drye with Pillitorie and Mastike, & brought to pouder, with the which washing ye mouth, much helpeth the toothach. And if a woman doubt of the being with child, and smelleth not the sauour of Garlike, set by hir bed side in the night, it doeth then vndoubtedlye declare that shee is conceiued with childe. And the eating of Garlike is good and profitable both to husbandmen, and laborers, which often eate colde meates, & meates of hard digestion. These hitherto of the properties of the Garlike.

Of

Of the ordering, care, and ſecrets of the great Garlike. Cap.lvj.

AND firſt the great Garlike, whiche ſome Authours name the Africa Garlike, and the Grékes Aphroſcorodon, is farre bigger of encreaſe, than our common Garlike. And now this Garlike, both Columella will, to be ſette on the ridges of the beds, like to the former Garlike, and that out of one head, manye Cloues to be broken off, whiche ought to be done in a fayre and calme day, in a white earth well digged vp & dreſſed, without any dung, about the Calends of October & Nouember. And to make the heades of this Garlike to growe bygge, then order the Garlike blades to come vp, like as was taught of the other Garlike. And in the ſetting alſo of the Cloues, remember to plante them, not onely foure fingers aſunder, but a finger déepe, and to rake the earth often ouer them in the growyng vppe, whereby the iuyce maye ronne to the rote, and cauſe them ware the bigger in the heades. And to conclude, all other inſtructions neceſſarily to be vnderſtanded about the further ordering of this great Garlike, maye be learned in other afore taught.

¶ Of the ordering, care and ſecretes of the Garden Radiſh. Cap.lvij.

AND firſt the Radiſh rote is well knowen both to the riche and poore, ſo that as well the huſbandmen as the Citizens do (at this daye) eate of the Radiſhe: the ſame before béeyng well ſcraped, cutte into thinne rounde ſlyces, and dipped in water and ſalte, the better procureth an appetite vnto meate.

And Columella willeth, that the ſéedes of the Radiſhe, bée ſowen in a well dunged and labored earth, and in the moneths of March, Aprill, and September. And after the rote be growen vnto ſome bigneſſe, then couer it ouer thicke with earth, for

that otherwiſe by leauing it bare, that the Sunne and ayre maye worke on the rote, doeth ſo cauſe the ſame to become harde and hollowe, as writeth Plinie, whiche willeth the Radiſh to be ſowne in a loſe and moyſte earth, without dunging. And Palladius writeth, that the Radiſhe in no wiſe agreeth to be ſowen either in a ſandie or grauelly grounde: but he affirmeth it to ioy vnder a temperate ayre, and to be ſown in beds, large aſunder, and deepe digged in after a new rayne, vnleſſe the ground be ſufficiently moyſte and watrie of it ſelfe. And when the ſeedes be ſowen, then oughte they by and by after to be couered with fine earth, and no dung mingled nor caſte vpon, but onely the chaffe of corne, although Columella contrarie writeth. And Ariſtomachus willeth, the leaues to be quite broken off, and pulled away in the Winter, whereby the rote may be the bigger in ſommer. And the rote alſo will be the pleaſanter in eating, if you breake of the leaues before it growe vnto a ſtalke, as Plinie writeth. And the ſmaller the leafe ſhal be ſo much the ſweeter and pleaſaunter will the rote bee. And to be alſo watred with ſalte water, it proſpereth the better as Plinie writeth: for that by the watring on this wiſe, the rote ſendeth ſuch bitterneſſe as then remayneth in the ſame. And to make your Radiſh taſt ſweete, then after the minde of Florentine, ſteepe your ſeedes before eyther in water and Honye mired togither, or in the licour of Reaſins, or elſe in water and ſuger, for two dayes togither, and after the drying againe ſow them ſo in the earth. And to make your Radiſh grow big, plucke away all the leaues, ſauing a ſmall ſtalke remayning, and after couer the ſame very thicke ouere with earth as Palladius willeth. And the like affirmeth Plinie, if that a hole bee made with a woodden dibble, and the ſame filled fiue fingers high, with the chaffe of corne, and after the ſeedes mired with dung and fine earth, it will after cauſe ſo greate a rote growe, as was the bigneſſe of the hole made. And the thinne ſowing of ſeedes in the ende of Julye, and vnto the middle of Auguſt, or elſe a little after, and weeding them often, after their comming vp, doth ſo cauſe them to growe the bigger in the rote. And

they

they alſo ioy in open ayre, but be muche harmed by growing in ſhadowie places. And if ſuche a drought doth happen, that you cannot aptlye ſow your ſeedes, then ſow them the thicker togither, in ſome moyſte and watrie place.

And when the yong plants be well ſprong vp, and ſtrong in the earth, and that the ground be wel moyſtned with ſhowres, then may you remoue the yong plantes, eſpectallye about the ende of Auguſt, and vnto the middle of September. And ſet them after in the earth, wel laboured and trimmed, for ſo they growe the pleaſaunter in eating And Petrus Creſcentius writeth, that the rootes of the Radiſhe dryed, and theſe wroughte into pouder, and after poured into a bigge glaſſe, or narrow mouthed pot glaſed full of wine, and letting the ſame ſo ſtand couered for a few dayes, wil after be turned into ſharpe vineger, which drunke daylye, doth maruellouſlye weare awaye, & conſumeth the ſtones of the kidneis, and helpeth beſides, many other grieſes of the body,

The Phiſick helpes.

The Radiſh is hot and dry in the thirde degree, but ſome write in the ſecond degree. And now the Radiſh eaten at ſupper, doth digeſt the meate eaten and heateth the ſtomache, and cauſeth alſo a ſtincking breath if any ſleepe by and by after the eating. And this roote is hurtful vnto women with childe, and therefore to be refrained in that ſeaſon. And the iuyce of the roote, annointed on olde vlcers, doeth both cleanſe and eate away the Cancker in them: and the ſame lyke worketh the pouder of the roote. And the iuyce of the Radiſhe boyled with hony and mixed with a little vineger, and after ſtrayned and drunke, doth helpe the quartaine ague, and ſtopping of ỹ milte. And the roote of the Radiſh layde playſterwiſe, doth help the water betweene the ſkinne, and ſuch diſeaſed with the hardneſſe, & ſwelling of the milte. And the iuyce of the roote drunk with the licour of reaſins, doth help the kings euill, and drunke with hony doth put away the cough. And this alſo helpeth ſuch whych be ſtopped in the breaſt, and draw the winde ſhort, by drinking therof. And of this roote is made an oxymell, on this wiſe: firſte bruſe the rootes ſomewhat, and infuſe them for two or three dayes in vineger, and after put to the ſame a thirde part of honny, which ſtrained, drinke thereof, for thys helpeth the quartaine, and one daye ague, vnleſſe the ſame proceede of ſalt fleumes.

and if there be colde and vndigested humours in the stomache, then steepe the rindes of the rootes of the Radish in hony & vinegre mixed togither, and of the same let the patient dayly eate a good quantity: after the same so eaten, drinke a draste of warme water, putting the your finger, or a feather dipped in sallet oyle, into the throte, and thys forthwith will procure you to cast forth at any time, but the aptest time is in the morning. And against the hardnesse of the milte, and liuer, seeth the herbe alone in oyle and wine, and applyy the same playsterwise, and the same playster layde hote on the bottome of the belly, neare to the roote of the priuitie, doth help the strangurie. And the water of the Radish distilled in September drunke morning and euening vnto the quantitie of three or foure ounces at a time, doeth help the stone, causeth vrine, and cleanseth also the reines, and ꝑ bladder. It doth cleanse the places also where the stones containe And ꝑ same water drunke doth helpe the kings euil, killeth the wormes of the belly, and helpeth the digestion of the stomache, and purgeth it of all clammy humors and other matters which hinder digestion, & it openeth also euery stopping of the inner members, and veyns. And drunke in the quantity aboue said, doth extenuate the tough humors, and causeth a cleare voyce: and this water gargelled in the throte, and holden in the mouth, doth helpe the swelling of the throte, and vlcers of the gummes, for it both resolueth, breaketh & consumeth. And this water drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, for three or foure weekes togither, doth help the water betweene the shinne, in that the patient refrayneth much and often drinking. For the lesse the patient then drinketh, the more he sendeth forth of the water in the vrine, and by that meanes is ꝑ sooner holpen. These hytherto of the properties of the Radish.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Nauew. Cap. lviij.

AND first the Nauew, well beareth any ayre in a manner, & delighteth in a fatte lose grounde, but it better prospereth in a leane and drie grauelly ground. And the propertie of the place, doeth chaunge the Nauew into a Rape, and the Rape contrariwise into a Nauew. And that your Nauewes maye well prosper, then sowe them in a well laboured and dunged grounde. And they also will well come vp being sowen in those places where the corne hath beene reaped of that same yeare. And if they growe to thicke, then remoue and set them thinner, whereby the other vnremoued, maye growe the

the bigger in the rote: they ought to be sowen aboute the ende of July, and in all the moneth through of August, and if they happen to lacke raine, then to water them so often as nede shall require. And in the weeding about them, both the Nauew and Rape be muche strengthned, and growe the better. And those Nauewes be the better which be long and in a maner wrinckled, not bigge, and not having manye rotes, but one onely rote, and that both sharpe and straight. And of the Nauewes be made a wholesome composition wyth the Radishe, a little salte, Vineger, honye, mustard, and swete spices, and wythout spyces also, the same may be made pleasaunt to eate.

The Phisicke helpes.

Nauew is hot of qualitie in the seconde degree, and doth muche nourish, but hardly digesteth, and maketh the flesh soft and puffed vp, yet lesse than doeth the rape, for the whiche cause if the Nauew or Nauewes, be boyled in water, and that the first water be cast away, and in the boyling of the second water, the hardnesse of the substance tempered, and so they ingender a meane nourishment betweene good and euill. And of this, such whyche be not well boyled, do hardely digest, and cause windinesse, and a stopping both in the veines and pores. Wherefore the Nauewes be then best to bee eaten, when as they be sodden in two waters, and in the thirde seething, be boyled wyth the farre of Beefe or mutton. These hitherto of the properties of the Nauew.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secrets both of the Persnep and yealowe Carrot. Cap. lix.

AND first the Garden Persnep is a rote very well knowne to all persons, and daily in vse euery where, whyche rote (as Rutillius writeth) being tenderly sodden, giueth good nourishment to the bodie. And nowe Palladius willeth the Persneps to be sowne in the sedes, or sette in the rotes, in the monethes of December, Januarie, and Marche, and that in fat grounde, deepe digged, lose and well turned vp, and orderlye

dressed. And the sedes also must be thinne sowen, and likewise the rootes thinne set, whereby they may growe and ware the bigger in the roote. And after the comming vp, they must bee weeded about for the better increase also of the roote. And first Plinie writeth, that there be many kindes of Carots, and this not of themselues, but of the proper places where they grow so altered. And nowe the yealow Carots (most sowne in Gardens) ought to be like ordered in ỹ sowing, as we haue aboue taught in the vsage of the Parsneps. And they ought also to be sowne as wel in Harueſt, as in the spring time, and after they bee come vppe, then remoued and sette thynner, for so they prosper the better, and ware the bygger in the rootes.

The Phisicke helps.

The roote of the Parsnep is hote in the middle of the second degree, and moyste in the first degree, so that the same eaten doth gretly profit the bodie. And nowe the roote tenderly sodden and eaten, causeth vrine, and doth especially profite the Melancholie. And the Garden Parsneps also eaten wyth meate, be profitable to the body, for that they engender good bloude, and the wilde Parsnep rootes eaten of women, do moue the termes. And the roote of the Parsnep hanged on the necke, doeth helpe the swellyng of the throte, and no venomous wormes shall harme the person which beareth the roote about hym. And the seedes of the Parsnep drunk wyth wine, and applyed in playsterforme to ỹ priuie place, (as Dioscorides writeth) doth drawe down the termes, helpeth the straightnesse of making water, and the paine of the side, which otherwise is named the plurese. And the roote applyed playsterwise, doth helpe the byte or sting of venomous wormes. Also the roote sodden and eaten, doth cause vrine, & prouoketh the veneriall act. And the leaues bruised and layde playsterwise with hony, doth clense and heale the great eating in the vlcers.

And the herbe with the roote shredde togither, and distilled aboute in the ende of the moneth of March, which drunke morning and euenyng, vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a tyme, and the pallie membres bathed wyth that water, doth helpe the shaking of them. And drinking euerye nighte vnto the quantitie of sixe ounces at a tyme, doth prouoke the veneriall act and encreaseth the sperme of the man. And thys water also drunke, doth helpe the straightnesse of making water.

And

And now the Garden Carot, as writeth Conſtantine, is hot and dry in the ſecond degree. But that Carret which groweth of the owne accorde, (and named the wilde Carret) is both leſſer then the Garde or ſowen Carret, and is alſo dry and hote in the thyrde degree. Alſo the Garden Carrets tenderly ſodden wyth meate, are pleaſaunt and holeſome. But now the wilde Carret boyled in wyne, wyth ſo many figs as you thinke neceſſull, and drinke, doeth put away the dry cough and the ſelfe ſame wyne drunke, doeth helpe the harde fetchyng of wynde. And the herbe or the roote boyled in rye or water and waſhyng the heade therewyth, doeth helpe the ſheadyng of the haire, proceedyng of a colde cauſe. And three handfuls of thys herbe boyled in Wyne and Oyle, and applyed playſterwyſe on the belly, do put away wynde, and heateth the ſtomach. And the herb boyled with Mallowes, and herbe Mercurie in Wine and Oyle, and applyed in playſterforme on the Nauill, doeth helpe gryppings of the bowels. Theſe hytherto of the propertics both of the Parſnep and Carret.

Of the ordering, care, and ſecrets of the Melons, and all the kindes of Pompions.

Cap. lx.

AND firſt the Melons, and all kindes of the Pompions, deſire in a manner the ſame earthe and ayre whiche the Citrones and Cucumbers do. And yet the earth not ſo fatte, nor ſo much dunged, whereby they may grow the pleaſaunter in taſte, and be the ſoner ripe. And all kindes ought to be ſowen thinne, as the ſædes put two fote aſunder in the earth, wel laboured, and caſt diligentlye into beddes, for that they ioye in largeneſſe of rome where they maye ſpreade hyther and thyther. And they alſo be greatly comforted with the herbes growing neare to them, ſo that they nede little weeding. And they oughte to be often watered, vntill they be well ſprung vppe, but after you maye not: and they be then ripe to be eaten, when they ſauoure ſweete, and appeare yealowe within. Alſo thoſe Melons or Pompions be the pleaſaunter in eating, which haue farre ſmaller ſædes than the other.

And

And there be other kindes of them, which be ſmall, grẽne, and very long, and all (in a manner) are crooked, which be named Melons, and do alſo eate ſowre, like the Citrones, hauing the like taſte in the eating: but they be not ſo colde Citrons, and therefore are better digeſted. And if you woulde make them ſweete in the eating, then let the ſeedes be ſteeped for three dayes togither, in the ſweete lycour made of water and hony, called otherwiſe Mulſe, or in ſweete Cow milke, and after the drying ſet orderly in the earth: for ſo the Pompions comming vp of thoſe ſeedes, will be farre ſweeter, and pleſaunt of taſte. And the Pompions will ſauour and ſmell very ſweete, if the ſeedes be layde for a good whyles among Roſe leaues, and that thoſe leaues mixed with the ſeedes, be ſo put into the earth, or otherwiſe the ſeedes be eyther ſteeped in Roſe water, or in ſome other pleaſaunte ſweete water, and then ſette (after the drying in the ſhadowe) into the grounde. And here learne, that Cats ought carefullye to be defended from the Pompions, for that they greedily deſire to come vnto them.

And as touching the other ſecretes, as to make them grow timely, verye bigge, and without ſeedes: reade hereafter, where we intreate of the ordering of Gourdes and Cucumbers.

The Phiſicke helpes.

The Melons be colde and moiſte in the ſecond degree: but thoſe which be ſweete in taſte, are temperately colde. And the ſeedes haue the like propertie in medicine to be vſed. And pleaſantly doth the Pompion eate, yet very hardly digeſteth, through the coldneſſe mixed to the moyſture of it. And the Pompion is then to be eaten, when as the ſtomacke before is throughlye cleanſed, in that the ſame doeth lightly alter into thoſe humors, and doeth ſo ſlacke digeſtion, by hauing preeminence in the ſtomacke. And of this we learne by the minde of the auntient men, that we eate the Pompions faſting, and to eate no other meate after them, vntill they be halfe digeſted in the body. And the eatyng of them doe greatlye helpe vnaturall heates, and wicked agues. And the ſeedes do purge the ſkinne, if the ſkinne bee waſhed with the decoction of them. And the Melons haue the ver-

tue

tue of clensing, as writeth Galen in his booke De alimentorum facultatibus: and of this they may aptly clense the spottes of the face, or Sunne burning, red pymples, and the fulnesse of the bodie, through the spottes of sundry colours. And the person whiche is yll coloured in the face, let him or hir take the seedes of the Melon, pilling off þ vpper skinne of them, vnto whiche put a little beane meale, & working the seedes into fine pouder, mixe them wel togyther, and after make small Cakes of the same wyth Rose water, whych drye in the Sunne, and when they be thus dryed, then wash the face with those Cakes orderly, and they will after cause the face become very clear and faire, and clense the filthy spottes of the skinne. And the seedes eaten or dronke, do cause vrine, and purge the Lungs and kidneys. And more do the seedes worke in the Lungs then in the bladder, for that a more stronger and mightier remedy ought to be ministred in þ stone of the bladder, than in the stone of kidneis or Loines. And the vpper rinde of the Melon layde to the foreheade, doth stay the running of the eyes. And the roote of the Melon doth heale such vlcers that stande full of matter, if the same be applyed plaisterwise wyth hony on the places. And many do eat the Melons with vinegre, mixing wyth it the Penyroyal, and Onions togither, for so they temper the harming force of the colde of it. And the Melons distilled, which ought to be done when they rype, and shredde into small peeces, the water dronke once euerye morning, vnto the quantitie of three or foure ounces, for the space of a moneth, doth greatly helpe the stone, causeth vrine, and purgeth the kidneis. Also the same water cooleth and delayeth all inward heates not vnnaturall, cooleth the liuer, and cealeth the thirst tempered with suger. And this water doeth help a hote cough, if linnen clothes dipped in it be applyed without, and it both putteth away heates, and swellings of the body, wheresoeuer they shal be. These hitherto of the properties of the Melons and al the kindes of Pompions.

¶ Of the ordering, care, and secretes of the Cucumber. Cap. lxj.

AND first the Cucumbers be either sowen or sette in beds, and in furrowes, a foote and a halfe high, and three foote broade, and the spaces betweene the furrowes ought to bee eight foote brode, wherby they may the freelyer speade out and runne abrode. And Palladius willeth the seedes after the sowyng, to bee often watered, vntill they be somewhat sprung vppe, for that they loye muche in the moysture.

And after they be thus ſprung vp, which commonly doe appeare, after the firſt or ſeuenth day ſowing, then maye you water them no longer, for that the watering afterward doth ſon deſtroy and kill them. And here learne, that when the ſeedes be ſowen, you ought then in the firſt or eight day following, to ſee if the ſeedes be then harde or opened, a ſure note or token that they may be good, but if the ſeedes be ſofte, then doe they throughly declare to be nought.

And in this caſe found, you ought to ſet other in their places, prouing againe the firſt day after, which finding in like condition corrupted, then ſet other in their places, and this ſo often do, vntill they appeare aboue the earth. And they alſo deſire to be ſowne or ſet in a fat earth, well dreſſed, dunged, & moyſte, and ſet in the ende of the moneth of Aprill, and alſo in the beginning of May. And after their comming vppe, they neyther néede raking nor wéeding with the handes: for that they bée muche holpen with the other herbes growing neare to them. And to make them the tenderer and pleaſanter in the eating, ſteepe the ſeedes for twa dayes before the ſowing, in ſheepes milke mixed with hony, or as Plinie writeth, in water mixed with hony, or in water mixed with Suger, for ſo do they cauſe the tenderer, whiter, and pleaſaunter Cucumbers, both in the ſmell and taſte, and fayrer alſo to the ſight. And the ſame experience do Columella, Florentine, the Greéke, Plinie, and Palladius write. And the Cucumbers alſo will growe long, white, and tender, if that vnder the braunches of the Cucúbers growing, you ſet either a boule or panne of water and hony, two hand bredth beneath them, for by that meanes they be cauſed the like, as writeth Gargilius Martialis. And as they ſpreade and runne out into length, ſo ought they then to bée borne vp with props and other meanes from the earth, for the weakeneſſe of their braunches, & vnto the better growing and proſpering of the Cucumbers. And if you will haue Cucumbers without ſeédes, then before the ſetting dip your ſeeds in the oyle of Sauine, mixed with the herbe Culix bruſed, and the Cucumbers will after growe the like. And to haue Cucú-

bers

bers timely ripe, and in a maner all the yere, then vse the seeds in the like order, as shall after be taught of the Gourdes, and that they also be set in such vessels or baskets, that they maye afterward in the colde season, be drawen vnder the succour of some warme place in the house, and in warme and Sunnye dayes, set againe abrode. And they may also be sette vnder the close couering of the walke in the garden, from the cold winds and frostes, and from the great heate of the Sunne, and so cōtinue all the yere through, as write both Plinie, and Columella, that Tiberius Cæsar had the like. And beware that they whiche haue their monthly courses, doe not then eyther come neare, nor handle them in no wise, for feare of hindring their growth afterwardes, and as some thinke, they do kill the yong Cucumbers, by their looking then vpon them. And to haue besides your Cucumbers with little moysture in them, let then the hole in the furrow, in whiche you shall set the seedes, be filled halfe vp with chaffe, and the other halfe couered agayne wyth earth, and water them nothing at all after the doyng on this wise.

The Phisicke helpes.

Cucumbers be cold and moyst in the seconde degree, as writeth Agenita, and do hardely digest, but the outwarde part of them doeth cause a perfiter moysture to such hauyng hot and strong stomackes, & extinguisheth thirst. And the whole substaunce also of the Cucumber eaten in the Summer, doth greatly profite such which then exercise themselues with any labour. But the eating of them do muche harme the fleumaticke and delicate persons, which do no laboure of body, and that to their stomackes especiallye. And yet the water or iuyce of them doth helpe such diseased with the Ague, and ceaseth thirst.

Also the meate of the Cucumbers hard within, and heauie in the hande, be daungerous to the stomacke, and of this the ripe ones bee the oftner willed to be eaten, which are knowen on this wise, ẏ whē they be soft in the feeling, and light in the hande, then they be fittest to be eaten. And the seedes drunke in milke, do greatlye helpe suche hauing a blistered bladder, and drunke in wine with so many seedes of Cummin as you may wel take vp with three of your fingers, and brused togither, doth greatly helpe the cough.

And the seedes also brused, and drunke with womens milke, doe helpe the frensinesse. And the seedes do helpe those that spitte matter by, being drunke with a little quantitie of Cummine seeds. And the Cucumber eaten do cause a loluble belly, and profiteth the stomacke, as writeth Dioscorides, and the smel of them doth restore the person out of his witte. And the seedes haue a meane force to cause vrine. And the seedes boyled in wine, and layde after warwise with the greene leaues vpon, do helpe the bite of dogs. And the seedes bruised and tempered with honnye, and that layde on hote burning pusshes, do qualifie the heate, and cleare them. These hitherto of the properties of the Cucumber.

¶ Of the ordering, care and secretes of the Gourd. Cap. lxij.

And first the Gourdes desire to be sowen or sette in a fatte grounde, moyste, dunged, and well laboured, as writeth Palladius. And in watering the seedes often they prosper the better, for that they much ioye, and are holpen with the moysture, although there be some which increase with a smal watering, and be also more pleasaunter by this in the eating. And if you happen to sette the seedes in a drie grounde, then set an earthen pan full of water neere to them, putting cloues or lists made sharpe at the one end, and hanging halfe out of the pan, ouer the edges of it, that they may so droppe continually water on them, in the forme of feltring, as the wife name it. And this way also of the watering of them doth greatlye helpe in a growth. And further Palladius willeth the seedes to be set in the ends of the moneth of Aprill, and beginning the moneth of May, a three or four fote asunder, and in such sort, as that two of the seeds be thrust into the earth togither, with three of the fingers, and that the blunt endes also be turned downewarde, and the sharp endes standing vpward. And that a night before they be thus planted in the earth, that the seedes be put into a panne of water, casting then forth such seedes which swimme aboue, and the other not the like swimming or rather lying in the bottome, set in the earth wel mixed with dung. And they may not be set in low furrowes, leaste the raine falling, and

filling

filling thoſe furrowes, do ſo choake and kill the yong plantes ſprung vp. And when they be well ſprung vp, and appeare aboue the earth, then rake the earth, putting it well about thē, and as nēde ſhall require, ſo vſe to water the plants. And if they happen to be ſet in a earth ſomewhat loſe, then after they be ſprung vp into ſome bigneſſe, the earth rounde about ought to be dēpe digged vp, that the rootes may ſo ſtretch and runne out diuerſe wayes. And as they growe vp ſtill, you may make a couer ouer (of them) like to an harbour, vnto the heigth of a man, that the leaued braunches maye be layde ouer to gyue ſhadowe, and the leaues alſo layde on the Gourdes to defend the heate of the Sunne, may ſo cauſe them to growe the better. And if not on this wiſe, then may you let their vine runne along on the earth, if you liſt. And to this alſo in doing ẏ like ſhal much auayle, wherby they may the ſoner ſend forth their fruites, and the more ſtore, if that the principaller and bigger heades be a little broken of in the tops, that they maye ſo cauſe other braunches to bring forth of the Gourdes. And Columella, Plinie and Palladius do write, that the ſēdes takē forth of the necke of the Gourd, and thoſe ſette with the ſharp endes vpright, and both dunged and watered, doeth after bring forth long and ſmall Gourdes. And the ſēdes which lye in the middle of the bellie of the Gourd, ſet with ẏ blunt endes vpright in the earth, and both dunged and watered, doe after ſende forth bigge and large Gourdes. And of thoſe do men after they be dryed make bottels to carrie Wine, Ale, or Beare in, to refreſhe the body withal, in the trauell of any long iourney. And thoſe ſēdes whiche lye in the bottome of the Gourd, ſette with the greate and blunte endes vpright in the earth, doe after cauſe both wide and large Gourdes. And ſowing all the ſēdes togither in one hole, you muſte after they be wel growen aboue the earth, ſtay them vppe with props made for the nonce. And if the yong plants be moleſted with greē flies of the Garden, then ſet by them the braunches of the herb Dragany, and it will eyther kill them by lightning therevpon, or at the leaſte cauſe them that they increaſe no more. And to

haue Gourds to grow without ſædes (like as was taughte before) of the Cowcumber, then lay youre ſædes, for three dayes before, eyther in Sauaine oyle (as Palladius writeth) or in the iuyce of the herb named Culex. And the like maye bee cauſed, if that the firſt ſtalke ſprong vp, be ſo digged aboute, that the head of the ſame may appeare, and as it alwayes groweth vp, ſo to be digged bare of the earth, and this do the third time, if neede ſhall ſo require. And this alſo do, that as the branches ſpring forth, and runne a long on the earth, the like cutte away of them, preſeruing alwayes the principall, and this will ſo cauſe them to bring forth Gourdes without ſædes, hauing onely but a ſoft pulpe within. And to haue eyther timely Gourds or Cucumbers, then at the beginning of the ſpring put fine ſifted earth, eyther into an old baſket or deepe earthē pan, and ẏ ſame well mixed with dung, ſprinckle or moyſten a little with water, and after ſet the ſame abrode in warme and ſunny dayes, and in a ſmall raine, but at the ſetting of the ſunne, ſet the ſame agayne vnder ſome couert, and this often do, in watring it in the meane whiles vntill al the froſtes & cold ſeaſon be paſt. And after that when a fayre day cōmeth, then ſet the whole pan or baſket vnto the brim in the earth wel dreſſed & trimmed, couering & raking ẏ earth ouer and aboute it, and after ordering the ſame (as afore is taught) you ſhal ſo haue ẏ timely fruites, either of the Gourd, or Cucumber. And ẏ ſame alſo you may the ſoner procure, & with leſſer trauaile & paines, if that you cut off the ranke and ſuperfluous ſhotes, either of the Gourds or Cucumbers, for by that meanes wil they ſpēdilier ſende forthe their fruites. And to make diuers formes like to birdes or beaſts, & ſundry perfit letters (of the Romain faſhion) on your Gourds, or Cucūbers, then take the yong fruite of either, as the ſame groweth on the branches, incloſing it into a mold of the like bigneſſe to the fruite, in the whiche let be imprinted, deepe or hollow, in ẏ forme that you deſire to haue after on your Gourde or Cucumber, and the like ſhall then appeare whē as ẏ fruit is come to his ful growth & bigneſſe. But further of this may

you

you learne, in my little treatiſe of Naturall & Artificiall concluſions, where I write more at large, both of the ſame, & the compoſitions of ſundry ſtrange formes of apples, and other fruites, with other pleaſant (and that right maruellous) matters to reade & heare. And now to come vnto our former matter in theſe: if that you deſire to haue long and ſmall Gourds, then take a long Cane boared through, or a hollow pipe, into which put ỹ very yong Gourd, & let the ſame ſo hang, which after wil ſtretch out all the length of the hollow pipe, for that the matter which ſhuld runne into a breadth, is by ỹ meanes ſent into a length. And Plinie writeth, that he ſaw a Gourde of .xx. foote long. And a like cõcluſion of making the Gourdes of ſuch a lẽgth, may be done; if that you ſet vnder the Gourds a pan or bole of water, a handbreadth or ſomewhat more beneath the ends hãging downe, which in ỹ nert day folowing, you ſhall find ſtretched out to the water, and thus ſetting the veſſell dæper, they wil ſhoote out lõger. And on this wiſe, you may make thẽ ſhoote out of a maruellous lẽgth, without any other crafte, or practiſe of the like. But if you take away the veſſell of water, then do they after bend, and turne vpwarde, ſo much do the Gourds ioy in the moyſture, and otherwiſe refuſe the dryeth. And Plinie writeth, that the Gourdes doe ſo mightely hate the oyle, that ſetting a bole or other veſſell of the ſame vnder them, in the lyke ſorte as you dyd the water, wyll in the nexte morrowe, bée turned or bended another way. And if not turned on this wiſe, then will they bée bended, as diſdeyning the oyle, into the faſhion of a hooke, whyche you ſhall manyfeſtly trye in the ſpace of one nighte. And héere learne, that both Columella, and Florentinus gyue ſpeciall warning, that no ſuche perſon hauing then the monethly courſe, doe handle or come nére, eyther to the Gourd nor Cucumber as they growe, for by the handling or approching nére to them, they ſone after wither and dye. And if ſuche alſo being in the like caſe doth then but looke on them, they eyther kil the yong ones with their looke, or cauſe them to growe vnpleaſant, or elſe corrupted and withered.

And

And thoſe Gourdes which you minde to kæpe for ſædes, lette them be hanged vp with their ſtemmes or ſtalkes vnto winter time, and dryed as they hang, eyther in the heate of the Sunne, or in the ſmoke (as Palladius writeth) for that otherwiſe the ſædes will putrifie, and ſerue after to no vſe. And if you minde to kæpe the freſhe and græne Cucumbers and Gourdes a long time, then hang them within a hogs heade, or other veſſel of white wine læs, not yet turned and ſowre, in ſuche ſort, that they be wholly couered with læs.

And in the like condition and manner, you maye preſerue them a long time, if that you laye them into a bryne prepared for the onely purpoſe. Alſo the Gourdes and Cucumbers be the like preſerued for a long time, if that they be hãged high, in a pype hauing vineger in it, or at the leaſt ſo high, that they touch not the vineger in no wiſe. And the veſſell beſides ſeruing to this vſe, ought to be well pitched about, that the vineger breathe not forth, in that the vineger is ſo penetrable, thorough the thinneſſe of the partes. And the Gourdes and Cucumbers maye beſte be kepte freſh and fayre all the yere thorough without putrifying, if that you put them into the diſtilled water of vinegre. Which wil not after ſuffer them to putrifye, but maintaine their freſh eſtate, as hath often bæne tryed, of the ſkilful practiſioners. And beſides theſe, if that you cut of yong ones, whiles they be yet tender, and ſcalde them in hot water, and after lay them forth to cole al a night through abrode, in a cleare and calme night, and on the morrow putte into a ſharpe bryne which will ſo kepe them freſh a long time. And now by all meanes aboue taught, you maye kepe Cucũbers and Gourdes freſh al the winter through. And you may beſides all theſe make your Gourdes laxatiue, and to purge the belly if that you infuſe the ſædes for a day and night, in the licour made of Rubarbe, Scamony, Coloquintida, Agaticke, and ſuch like purges. And after this, ſowe the ſædes in the earthe, in like order as before was taught. And to make them pleaſaunt of taſte & ſmell, order the ſæds in the like ſort, before ỹ ſetting of thẽ, as you wer taught in ỹ other chapters going before.

The

The Phiſicke helps.

The Gourd is cold and moyſt in the ſecond degree, and the ſeedes do ſerue to the vſe of medicine. And the Gourde alſo is not to bee eaten raw, for that the ſame is ſo vnſauery with meate, and therefore it ought the rather to be ſodden, roſted, or fryed before the eating, as writeth Galen. And nowe the ſeedes cleane picked from the vpper ſkinne, and ſodden in barley water, and after ſtrayned and drunke, doth help the diſeaſes in the Iuer, the kydneys and bladder, and the impoſtumes of the breaſt, and prouoketh vrine. And if a ſicke perſon ſhall abhorre to drinke of this water, then may you make a ſyrope of it with ſuger, for that the ſame ſo greately profiteth vnto all agues. And for the heate of the Iuer, take the iuyce of the peeces and meate of the Gourds, and temper the ſame wyth milke and vinegre, and after dipping a lynnen cloth in the ſame, apply the Iuer without, and it much helpeth. And the Gourds alſo ought to be hanged vp and dryed as afore was ſpecified, and the winter approching, the ſeedes ought then to be taken foorthe, and rubbed with ſalt, that ſo the clammy humours may bee auoyded.

And the kernels alſo oughte to be layde in a dry place, leaſt the moyſture corrupt the ſeedes. And the ſeedes may well be kepte for three yeares in good efficacie. And the meate and peece of the Gourd layde playſterwiſe to the forepart of the head of yong children, dothe ſo take away the inflamation and greate heate of the brayne and head. And the iuyce of the ſame anoynted on hote burning Goutes, doth aſſwage the burning heate of the ſame, and alſo qualifieth the inflamations of the eyes. And the iuyce alſo preſſed out of the meate of the Gourd, and the ſame dropped into ẏ eares, doth aſſwage the burning heate of them. And vnto the ſame vſe, it may either be applyed alone, or elſe mixed with oyle of Roſes, and ſo dropped hote in the eares. And the ſame iuyce mixed with the oyle of Roſes, and anoynting the ridge bone and loynes with the ſame, dothe aſſwage the burning heate of the ague. And the ſame doth alſo help the burning heate of that griefe, called the holy fire. And the aſhes made of the rindes of the Gourds, and ſtrawed on the vlcers of the ſhamefaſt place, now growen vnto a rottennes, dothe not only cleanſe but bringeth them vnto a ſcarre: alſo the aſhes ſtrawed on a burning, doth marueilouſly heale the ſame, And the decoction of the meate of the Gourd, with a little honny and nytter, and that drunke, doth looſe gently the belly. And if any making holowe the raw Gourd, doth after fill the ſame with wine, and ſetteth it a broade for a ſpace, and that on the morrow drinketh moderately of it faſting, it doth alſo gently looſe the belly. And the rawe meate of the Gourd ſhred, and layde playſterwiſe on ſwellings and hard ryſings of the fleſh, doth greatly aſſwage them. And the Gourde full

ripe, ought to bee diſtilled togither wyth the ſeedes, and finely ſhredde. And nowe the diſtilled water mixed wyth Suger, dothe ceaſſe the thyrſte, helpeth the cough proceeding of a hote cauſe, and loſeth the belly. And the ſame water dronke twice a day, for twenty or fortie dayes togyther to the quantitie of three ounces at a tyme, doth helpe the ſtone of the kydneis. And in lyke manner dronke for tenne days togyther, prouoketh vrine, and cleanſeth the raynes and bladder. And the ſame water alſo dronke, dothe qualifie the burning of the ague. Theſe hitherto of the properties of the Gourde.

¶ Of the ordering and care, of the Beane of Egypt. Cap. lxiij.

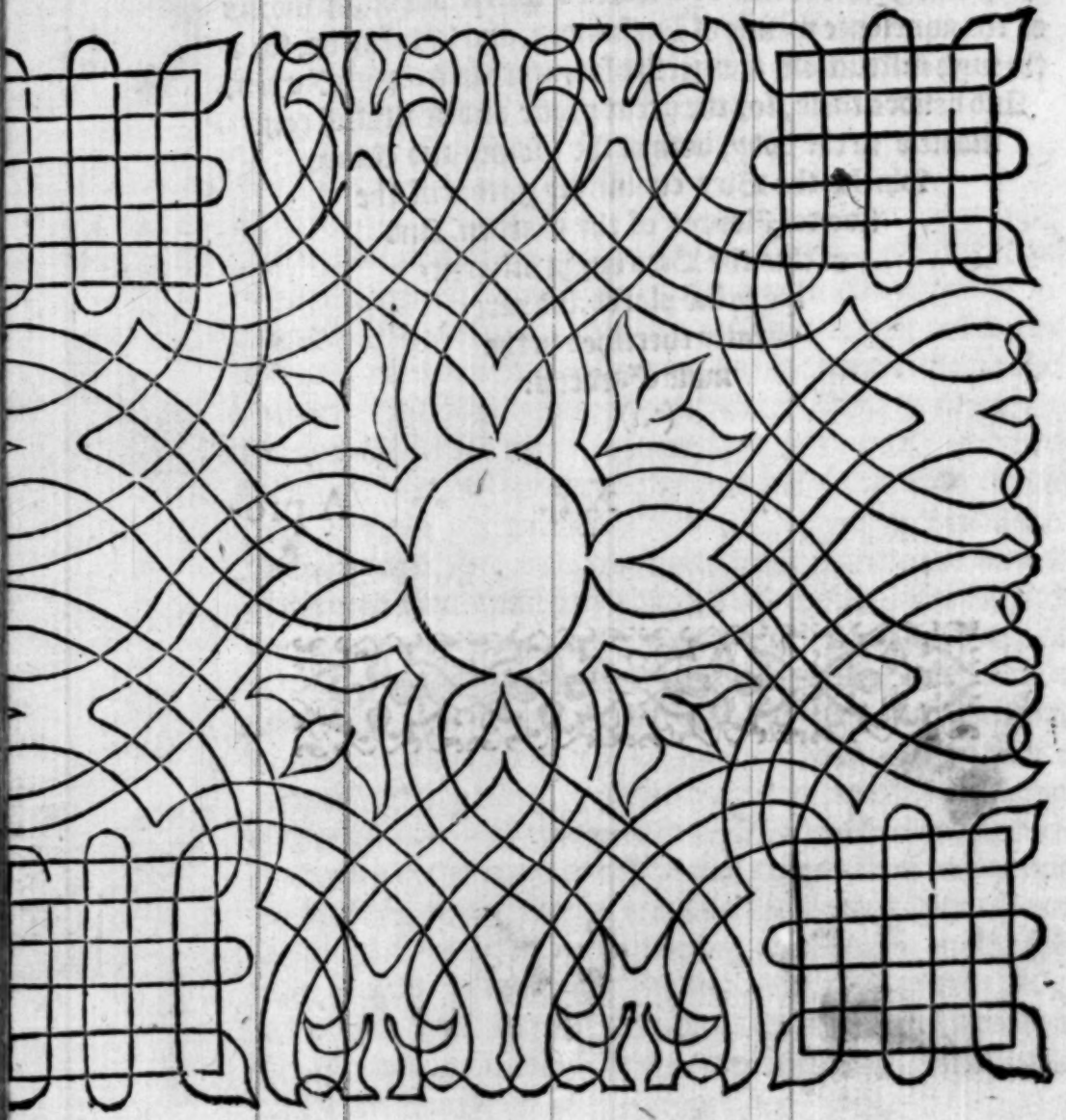
AND firſte the Beane of Egipt, ought to be ſowen or ſette in the moneth of February, and loueth alſo to growe in a moyſt place, fatte and watriſhe. And it loueth beſides to come vp, among running ſprings, but for the qualitie of the grounde, it greatly forceth not, ſo that the ſame be alwayes watered, as neede dothe require. And it may in a manner beare continually leaues, if the ſame bee defended from the colde, by ſome little couer or ſhedde, ſtandyng vnder all the Winter time. And nowe the place from whence the ſlippes of the moſt plantes bee dayly ſlipped off from the ſtalkes, for the intent to be ſette agayne, wyll ſufficiently inſtructe anye meane witted perſon, howe at times conueniente hee ſhoulde ſette thoſe agayne into the earthe. And where at this time, we doe omitte and ouerpaſſe ſundrye poſie and garlande floures, wyth herbes profitable to be eaten, it is, for that they require no other manner or diligence of dreſſing and ordering, than the former taught. And many alſo of theſe come vp of theyr owne accorde, and ſundrye others, whyche delighte in the like order of planting and ſowing as the former. And therefore let thys treatiſe nowe fauourably paſſe, which I meane hereafter to increaſe with ſundry pleaſante floures, and profitable herbes needefully to bee ſowen and ſet in the moſt gardens.

And in the meane tyme loke for a proper treatiſe (and that right profitable) of the moſt maruellous gouernement,

vſe and commoditie of the hony Bées, whyche I adioyne to this treatiſe of Gardening, in that the ſame (after my iudgemente) ſæmeth belonging to the matter of the Garden. And this I after my ſimple ſkyll, haue reduced and broughte into Engliſh, gathered firſt by a learned writer out of the workes of the auncïente menne of Huſbandry, and ſette forthe, for a through inſtruction, and perfite furniture in a large Garden. And beſides theſe, for the great profit and healthfull commoditie to the body, both of the Honny and Ware, whiche the Bées cunningly gather of the ſwæte Floures of the Garden. And of this the Bées ought diligentlye to bæ placed and carefully cheriſhed in the moſt Gardens.

(·.·)

proper knot for a Garden, vvhere as is ſpare roume enough,
the vvhich may be ſet eyther vvith Time, or Iſop,
at the diſcretion of the Gardener.



¶ Certaine neceſſarie precepts in the cutting vp, plucking avvay, gathering, and preſeruing of the moſt herbs, Floures, ſeeds, and rotes, ſeruing eſpecially to medicine.

Chap. lxiiij.

And firſt thoſe Herbes, which ſerue for the only vſe of the pot, to be boiled with meat, ought then to be cut vp, and gathered, whē as they be wel grown in heigth, and that with a ſharpe knife, ſomewhat aboue the earth. But of ſundry herbes be the leaues only gathered, and that with ẏ hād plucked vp, and broken of, when they be come (as it wer) vnto they⁊ full growth, which be the Lettuce, the Endiue, the Succorye, the Bëetes, the Arrach, the Clary, the Borage, Marigold leaues, the Parcely, Colewortleaues, and ſuch like. But in the Winter tyme the ſtalkes be wholly cut vp, leauing then no ſtems behind. And beſids, in al theſe aboue rehearſed, except ẏ Parcely, the Fennel, the Sauge and certaine others, if that the ſtems or ſtalkes after they be well come, be then broken of or cut away, wil continue the longer time grëen, and without ſëeding. And when any would vſe any herbs hot of qualitie, then lette him rather gather the herbes freſhe and grëene, then vſe thoſe beyng drye, for that the grëene do leſſe heate, in that the moyſture of thoſe grëene doth greatly mitigate the heate in them: and for the only vſe of Sallets, gather your herbes, being then very yong, and tender buds, excepte of the Lettuce & Endiue, which after the minde of the Gardners, eate pleſanter being grown vnto a whitenelle, than eaten ſo yong and grëene. And now thoſe herbes (for the vſe of medicine) ought rather to be gathered and cut vp, when as they be in a manner come vnto

their growth, and that before the colour of the floures beginne to change, & the ſæds ſomewhat appeare. And this alſo ought to be done, in a cleare and warme day, and that they haue byn moyſtned with ſome floures falling for two or thræ dayes before, ſo that they ought not to be gathered when any rayne, moyſture, or wet dew is on them, nor being then dry parched with the heate of the Sun, nor in a rayny & cloudy day: for any of theſe, do much hinder the kæping anye time in their vertue Alſo they ought to be gathered, when they be fut of iuyce, and freſh, and that not the ſmaller or bigger are to be choſen, but the meaner, and ſuch beſides whiche fall not to withering. And only the tender tops, the leaues and floures are to be gathered, & dryed in the ſhadow, in a place open toward ẏ South, not being moyſt, and defended from the duſt and ſmoke. And for the better defending and preſeruing of them, to be put vp in bags cloſe bound at the mouth, & in boxes for that vſe.

And they alſo kepe their ſtrength and vertue, for one whole yere, ſo that they are to be renued euery yere, vnleſſe ẏ herbes be gathered in ſuch a yeare, that the ſeaſon then ſhall be long without raine, and that the ſommer folowing be very moiſt, for then may you rather vſe thoſe herbes, gathered in the drye ſommer before, than thoſe in the rainy yere folowing. And the floures for the vſe of medicine, ought then to be gathered, whē as they be in their greater force, and full open abrod, vnleſſe ẏ Lilly, the Flouredeluce, and Roſe, whiche ought rather to bæ gathered, when as they be not wholly opened. And they ought in the like order to be dryed and layd vp, as aboue was taught of the herbes: and they laſt alſo for a yeare in their ſtrength & vertue. And they ought beſides, to be renued euery yeare, like as was taught afore of ẏ herbes. And ſæds ought to be gathered, when they be throughlyripe, and before they ſhed or fall of, and this alſo in a cleare and faire day. Alſo the fuller ſæds, and not wrinckled and ſuch which kepe the perfit ſauour & taſt of the kind of the herb are rather to be gathered and kept, and dryed in the like cōdition as the herbs, and put after into glaſſes, or hanged vp in bags, and this in a drye place, being frée

from

from moyſture. And the fruites of the plantes, are to be gathered, when as they be in their full ripenesſe, and not before they begynne to fal of.

And both the fuller and waightier are to be choſen, which ought after to be dryed in the Sunne, or in an Ouen, by reaſon of the moyſture conteyned in them. And the rots are to be gathered in the apt places, and the beſt of euery kinde, & that the fruites be lately fallen of, and the leaues of the ſtems begin to ſhed of, and this in a cleare day, for that great rain doth weaken them, and filleth them ful of moyſture. And the greater rotes may be kept for two yeares, but the leſſer only for a yere, if they be hanged vp to drie in a ſhadowie place, and that from duſt and ſmoke. And as touching the whole herbe together, the ſame ought to be gathered when it ſhall come vppe vnto the ful growth. And whatſoeuer are gathered in the decreaſe or wayne of the Mone, be better to vſe, and will longer be kept, than thoſe which are gathered in the increaſe of ỹ Mone. And the worthier herbes be thoſe and to greater effect, which kéepe their liuely colour, ſtronger of ſauour, and more apparant in taſt. And the Roſes and other floures gathered in a fayre and warme day, do yélde a ſwéter diſtilled water, thã thoſe floures which be gathered in a wet cloudy day, and thys diſtilled water beſides laſteth longer and to better effect, than that other of the contrarie manner. And further learne, that from the foure and twenty day of the moneth of Marche, vnto the 24. day of June, are the leaues of all maner of herbes moſt of ſtrength and vertue, and do eſpecially ſerue in that time, to the vſe of Medicine. And from the 24. daye, of the moneth of June, vnto the twenty foure of September, are the ſtemmes and ſtalks in their ful ſtrength and vertue, to the vſe of Medicine. And from the twenty four day of the moneth of September, vnto the xxv. of March againe, are the rotes of the moſte herbes in their ful ſtrength and vertue to be miniſtred in medicines. And here alſo learne, that the wilde hearbes are ſtronger in vertue than be the Garden herbes, although the wilde be the leſſer in bigneſſe, according to Plinie.

Ayo

And the wilde herbes alſo growing on the hilles and mountaines be farre ſtronger in the effect than thoſe wilde growing in the plaine and lower grounde. And to conclude, all hearbes and ſæedes, which more aptly ſerue to ỹ vſe of Medicine, ought rather to be kepte and hanged vppe in bagges, but the floures cloſe ſtopped in narrow mouthed glaſſes, that the ſauoure and ſtrength of the floures breath not forth. And that theſe alſo be ſet and hanged vp in ſhadowie places, frée from moyſture, and from the duſt and ſmoke. And the rotes which you minde to kepe greene, are better reſerued and kept in light ſand, excepte they be ſuche rotes, whiche be rather kept dryed, and are alſo better preſerued in a dry and ſhadowie place, as aboue was taught. But the ſæedes of the Lékes and Onions, and of certayne other herbes, be better kept in their huſkes than ỹ moſt ſæedes of the other herbes. And here againe learne the opinion of the worthy Phiſition Montagnana, in the gathering of the rotes, floures and fruites, ſeruing to the vſe of medicine, which affirmeth that the rotes ought not to be gathered vntil the fal of the leaues, and this eſpecially, from the middle of the moneth of September, vnto the beginning of Nouember. And the floures are to be gathered from the middle of the moneth of May, vnto the beginning of July, and fruites ought to be gathered, according to the diuerſitie of times of the herbs.

Thus endeth the ſeconde Booke, of the care, ordering, and ſecrets of the moſte herbes of the Garden.

(∴)

A profitable instruction of the perfite ordering of *Bees, with the maruellous nature*, propertie, and gouernemente of them: and the necessarie vses both of their Honie and waxe, seruing diuerlly, as well in inward as outward causes: gathered out of the best writers.

To which is annexed a proper Treatise, intituled: Certaine husbandly coniectures of dearth and plentie for euer, and other matters also mete for Husbandmen to knowe. &c.

By THOMAS HYLL Londoner.

Imprinted at London, by Henrie Bynneman.

ANNO. 1579.

The Authors out of the which this Treatiſe is gathered.

C. Plinius.
Ariſtotle.
Albertus.
M. Cato.
Iunius Columella.
M. Varro.
Palladius Rutilius.
Theophraſtus.
Guilhelmus de Conchis.
Galen.
Paule Aegineta.
Cornelius Agrippa.
Hieronimus Cardanus.
And ſundrie others.

To the worshipfull maister M.

Gentleman, Thomas Hill vvisheth all health and felicitie.

AS it hath beene, and is yet (vvorshipfull Sir) a trade commonly vsed among most men, to choose out from a greate number, some one, vnder whose name and title they may publishe their workes: Euen so I (following the steps of the learned, though in all other poyntes most inferiour) hauing finished this little treatise of Bees, and casting with my selfe to whome I mighte presente it, founde my selfe much bounden vnto your worship, both for your gentlenesse which I haue of late tasted, and also for youre friendship which I finde alwayes readie towards me. And therefore hauing none other wayes to recompence the least parte of youre curtesie and gentlenesse, thought it best to gratifie youre worship with such a simple gifte as mine abilitie will suffer me to bestow on such a friend. And although Sir this Treatise is farre dissonant from youre studyes, yet considering your earnest desire to knowledge and learning, and agayne pondering the pleasantnesse of the matter, thoughte this might be made a recreation for your grauer studyes. For when your mind shall bee searching for profound reasons, and oppressed with deepe cogitations, then taking and reading this little Pamphlet, it will bring a forgetfulnesse vnto your former weerynesse, and cause a newe delighte vnto your mind: For heerein may you see, first the maruellous gouernement of the Bees, through the onely instincte of nature, as in theyr obedience to their King, and other officers, in punishing the ydle loyterers, in cherishing the true labourers in theyr manner of fighting, with suche like a greate many, as it is wonderfull to reade, and almost vncredible to beleeue: secondly, the liuely effectes and commodities that arise of theyr Honie and VVaxe. And lastly, howe profitable they are for common wealth, and howe necessarie for mans vse, I mighte heere speake muche in the prayse of the Bee,

which all I will omitte, ſeeyng onely myne intente is to ſhewe my ſelfe myndfull of your good turnes and benefites, deſiring you to take this in good parte, whyche proceedeth from a well willing minde. And I am ſorie that at this preſente I had none other matter more worthy to haue gratified your worſhip withall: but that whiche wanteth in power, aboundeth in good will. Thus troubling your worſhip no longer, I commit you to the keeping of the Almightie, praying him to increaſe in you all vertue and godlyneſſe, and to grant you the long yeares of Neſtor.

Yours moſt bounden
Thomas Hill.

The Preface into the instruction of Bees.

ALthough (gentle Reader) I haue not giuen thee anye labour of mine owne, but rather haue collected the sayings and writings of manye auncient authours, yet I trust they shall be well accepted of thee without offence. For as he that setteth forth vnto the view & reading of all men such knowledge, as by his lõg study & experience he hath gotten, is worthy to haue his due reward of commendation: euen so he is not to be discõmended, who painfully reuoluing the bookes and volumes of many and diuers ancient writers, reduceth thẽ into one little Treatise, for the commoditie and profyte of the simple and vnlearned sorte, for whose onely sakes I haue trauelled in the translation of this worthy matter, touching the right vsage and handling of Bees: a thing very rare, and seldome seene in the Englishe tongue, and yet verie profitable for a common wealth, and commonlye vsed among the poore husbandmen, though not in euery poynt as they ought to be, yet according to theyr knowledge and experience. But I, to the intente that a further learning mighte be added to their skill, haue so trauelled therein, that I trust their knowledge shal be increased, & such as haue no knowledge at all, may be instructed without any other teaching. I haue ioyned this little Treatise vnto my booke of Gardening, for that most men do ioyne thẽ both togither, as whẽ they place their Bees in their Gardens, whereas they may with lesse paine and easilier, gather of the sweete smelling flowers, their Honie, and Ware. And for all

these my paynes gentle Reader, I craue nought else of thee, but to giue me that which of dutie in a maner I ought to haue, for if thou doest receyue any commoditie or fruite eyther by this, or by my other Treatise hereto annexed, whiche hathe to name the Halbandly coniectures, with sundry rules of Phisicke, then giue me the reward of thy good report, and friendly accepting of these two Treatises, and if not, yet accept mine endeuours in good part, which be meant to do thee good. And thus leauing (gentle reader) to trouble thee farther, I commit thee to God, who giue thee the furtherance of knowledge, both in these and all other needefull artes.

(.*.)

A neceſſarie Table ſetting forth the contents of theſe tvvo Treatiſes.

Theſe treated of in the firſt Treatiſe.

WHy Bees are named to be creſted or parted betweene, or as it were ringed or rather pleighted: what worke the ſwarme new gathered in the Hiue firſte taketh in hande: and whether they may liue after their ſtings be gone. Cap. j.

VVho firſt taught the preparation and increaſing of Bees, and found out the vſe of honie. cap. ij.

How Bees do naturally ingender. cap. iij.

Of the vnperfit Bees, which men properly name drone Bees. ca. iiij.

VVhether the Bees draw breath, or haue any bloud in them. cap. v.

Of the great vtilitie and profit of the Bees vnto mans vſe. cap. vj.

Of the care and diligence of the Bees. cap vij.

Of the maruellous gouernement of the King of honie Bees, and of the obedience which they vſe to hym, cap. viij.

VVhat kind of Bees be beſt, and rather to be choſen. cap. ix.

VVhere the Hiues of Bees ought eſpecially to be placed. cap. x.

VVhat things Bees do chiefly abhorre, and greatly hate. cap xj.

By what ſignes men may knowe when the honie Bees are diſeaſed, and how men may cure them. xij.

VVhat maner of perſon the keper of the Bees ought to be. cap. xiij.

By what meanes the ſwarme come forth, may be preſerued from flying away. cap. xiiij.

Of the Bees new ſettled in a ſwarme togither, and taken and recouered againe. cap. xv.

VVhich are the beſt and fitteſt hyues for the honie Bees. cap. xvj.

Of the cleanlineſſe and ſweeteneſſe of the keeper of Bees, and howe hiues ought to be fenced about, and prepared within. cap. xvij.

How Bees lacking honie may be fed in that preſent neede. ca. xviij.

How the dead Bees may be reſtored to life againe. cap. xix.

Of the battell that Bees ſometime haue within themſelues. cap. xx.

How Bees loſt, may be recouered and found againe. cap. xxj.

That the Bees ſting no perſon cõming neere to their hiues. cap. xxij.

VVhen and how the hiues ought to be gelded. cap. xxiij.

VVhat the honie is, and how from the hiues the ſame may be prepared to vſe. cap. xxiiij.

VVhich

The Table.

VVhich honie is accounted beſt. cap.xxv.
Of the venomous honie, and of the wõderful hony of Creta. ca.xxvj.
Of the miraculous worthineſſe of honie. cap.xxvij.
How profitable the vſe of honie is in medicine. cap.xxviij.
Of the drinke of hony whiche they call the Mulſe water, or ſweete water of the Romaines. cap.xxix.
Of the drinke *Oenomel*, which is made of pure wine & hony. ca.xxx.
Of the ſingular water of hony gotté by order of diſtillatiõ. ca.xxxj.
Another maner of diſtilling the hony more at large taught. ca.xxxij.
The maner of diſtilling a water of hony named the Quinteſſẽce. ca.33
The maner of drawing and making waxe of the combes. cap.xxxiiij.
VVhat waxe is beſt allowed, &c. cap.xxxv.
Of the great cõmoditie and benefite of waxe in medicines. ca.xxxvj.
Of that whiche is a ſtay of the combes, and made for a defence of Bees. cap.xxxvij.
How to make waxe white. cap.xxxviij.
How to make red waxe. cap.xxxix.
How to draw a profitable oyle out of waxe for ſundry vſes. cap.xl.
Another way of drawing the oyle of waxe moſt noble, and dothe maruellouſly help the cold goute, the ſciaticke, the ſwelling of the legges, and all other griefes of a colde cauſe. cap.xlj.

Theſe deſcribed in the other Treatiſe.

CErtaine Husbádly cõiectures of dearth & plenty for euer. cap.j.
An euerlaſting Prognoſticatiõ of the ſtate and cõdition of euery yeare, by the only calẽds of Ianuary, writté by the anciẽt & learned *Lopol. Auſt.* & other for the cõmodity of the wiſe husbádmẽ. ca.ij.
How to foreknow the ſtate of the yeare by the only riſing of the dog ſtarre, out of the husbandrie of *Diophanes*. cap.iij.
Other profitabl inſtructiõs, right neceſſary for husbádmé to know. c.4
A moſt profitable rule for the preſeruation of mans health, throughout the twelue monethes of the yeare, after the minde of diuers learned men of the Vniuerſitie of Padua. cap.v.
Of the falling ſicke on any of the weeke dayes, out of that auncient Phiſition *Hypocrates*. cap.vj.
Of thoſe manifeſt ſignes, which declare raine to follow. cap.vij.
Of thoſe manifeſt ſignes which declare fayr wether to folow. ca.viij.

¶ The firste Treatise setteth foorthe the *strange gouernmẽt, propertie, and benifite* of the Bees, with the commoditie of their Hony and Waxe, whiche serue vnto many good vses, aswell *in outward as inwarde causes applied, gathered out of* Plinie, Albertus, Varro, Columella, Palladius, Aristotle Theophrastus, Cardanus, Guilielmus de Conchis, Agrippa, and diuers other singular Authours.

¶ Why Bees are named to be creasted or parted betweene, or as it were ringed, or rather pleighted. What work the swarme newe gathered in the Hiue, first taketh in hande, and whether they maye liue after their stings bee gone. Cap. first.

PLINIE nameth Bées cleft beasts, bicause of the diuision or parting betweene of the head & shoulders: and Aristotle nameth thẽ plighted or ringed, in that their bodies are diuided with plightes and rings. And most men know, that the Bées haue neyther sinewes, bones, flesshe, gristle, backe-bone, nor fat, but are only created of a certaine mixture, being a meane betweene these, and hauing a very fein intralles. And againe, no man needeth to doubte, but that the Bées be a kinde of beasts, greatly to be set by for mans vse, & for mans prouision, are nourished of the aire, passing throughe the diuided places, which they by great diligence and care preserue from being stopped, for as sone as they be stopped, they shortly after die, like as the same we may learne, when anye happeneth to fall or light into Oyle, which straight way after die, throughe the Oyle stopping then their powers. They haue and fly with foure wings, that they maye the better carrye in their bellies the stings of reuengement. For when two of thẽ striue togither in fight, then do they hold and kẽp their stings

in their mouths by a greedy desire, or for eagernesse sake. Now after the seauen starres named Vergiliæ, be once risen in sight aboue our horizon, then do they hyde thē in their proper holes, so that they go seldome after abroade, vntill the Beanes doe bud, and if they happen to beginne at any tyme to flye abroade when as a fayre daye mouth them forwarde, then slacke they no suche dayes afterwarde, but occupy themselues. And firste they prepare and make their combes, which they fashion into apt houses, or rather celles of ware, after this they haue yong, and then beginne they to gather hony. They liue also the longer by hauing their stings, for that once gone, or taken away, they dye forthwith through the lacke of their intrailes, whiche they lose together with their stings.

¶ Who firste taught the preparation and increasing of Bees, and founde oute the vse of Honny. Cap. ij.

The reporte goeth, that one Aristomachus firste founde out and taught the increasing of Bees, whome Plinie writeth to be so earnest in the same, that setting apart al other affayres, he only studied night & day how he might best intreate and vse Bees, according to their kinde. But others ascribe this inuention to one Thasius, who (as they saye) deserued no lesse commendation, both for his diligence and skill among Bees: but this he specially followed in the fielde, and that farre from the Towne. And of this the common people (as by a nickname) no more named him Thasius, but Agrius, for his wilde or rather straunge life, whiche he then led in the fielde, whome Plinie also affirmeth to haue written a Booke of the increasing and multiplying of Bees. And Columella ascribeth this inuention, to the inhabitaunts of the hill (named Hymettus) being in the Countrey of Attica, for there (saieth he,) was one Eriethonius, who taught (as mē write) the true and perfect ordering of thē. Plinie againe ascribeth the inuention of Hony to one Aristeus a man of Athens. Diodorus Siculus in the fyfte Booke of hys workes, writeth, that Curetes, a people of Creta, did firste finde

oute

out the Hony, Macrobius ascribeth the same to one Saturnus. Others to the Thessalians. And many to Melissus, an auntient King of Creta, others to Nassus Liber Pater, thus writing, that Liber hath obtayned the renowne for finding out of Honye.

¶ How Bees do naturally engender. Cap. iij.

FIrste the Bées procéde of Bées, by the actuall doing togyther, after whiche they lay egges, sitting vppon them, as the Hens do on their egs. And when they haue sit on them for the space of .xlv. daies, then do they hatch their yong ones, whiche yong (at the first) come forth, much like to white Worms, except the King, who onely as he is hatched, hath wings. At the firste time, one of them hatcheth fiue young togither, the nexte time fewer, and so fewer & fewer, vntill she commeth to one at a time, bicause the abundaunce whiche is in them, dothe in the continuaunce of time weaken. In the time of their sitting they make muche noise to gette them heate withall. And aboute the sides of the combes, be sometimes greater Bées bred, which mē for their sound & noise do properly name Trūpeters, and they also haue whole hornes, of which come the bastarde Bées. There be also other Bées bigger in body, muche like to the Kings, but they be pale, and haue no sting, bicause of the beauinesse of their body. All which kindes, Guilielmus de Conchis dide obserue in the Hyues of a certaine Consull of Rome, whiche properly were made of verye thinne and cleare horne. Some write, that Bées are also engendred and bredde monstrously, and that contrary to Nature, without the mutuall coniunction, if that a whole calfe be buried in the earth, and there lye rotting whiles the wind blow out of the Weste, for by that meanes, as writeth Maro, doth the same brede Bées. And not vnlike to this doeth Cornelius Agrippa in his firste Booke de Occulta Philosophia, and Hiero. Cardanus in hys ninth booke of Subtilties write, ỳ of a rotten horse do waspes procéde: of an Asse, humble bées: of a Mule, hornettes: of the haire of a woman (hauing then hir motherly courses) Serpēts: and of Crcuilles (the shelles plucked off,) Scorpions.

¶ Of the vnperfect Bees, which men properly name Drone Bees. Cap. iij.

THe Drone Bées (as writeth Plinie) are vnperfect Bées, without sting, and the least weary, yet be they verye heauy of body, and slow in doing their businesse. They also doe the seruices and trauells of the true Bées, although the right and perfect Bées doe rule and gouerne them, yea and put them formost in their labours, so that if they happen to be slow in their doings, then doe the right Bées punish them without pitie. Also these doe helpe the right Bées, so well in their workes as in their breeding, for þ the multitude of them, cause the more heat and warmeth togither. And howe muche the greater the multitude of them shall be, and so muche more will the increase come of the swarme. When the hony wareth ripe, then are the Drone Bées driuen forth, and the kinde also of these are onely seene abroade in the Spring time.

¶ Whether the Bees drawe breath, or haue any bloud in them. Cap. v.

NOw some affirme, that the clouen beasts draw no breth in that they haue not the fan of the hart, which is þ lights or lungs, for as they write, nothing without them can breath. But Aristotle writeth, that the same is possible among Bées, hauing the sting (although they haue no bladder) to breath by their sting. And the Bées haue no bloude, because they haue neither hart nor lungs: yet Plinie affirmeth, that nothing done by nature may be thought or iudged incredible: for the same is fully persuaded in wise mẽ, that the Bées haue a certain liuely moisture, like as the Cuttle in the Sea, which hath a kinde of pinke in it, and is as the iuyce of it, with the whiche the Diers (at this day) do make their Purple colour.

¶ Of the great vtilitie and profite of the Bees vnto mans vse. Cap. vj.

A Great profite ariseth by Bées, if they be set in a conuenient and fit place, and that both carefully & wisely guided, as Plinie

Plinie writeth in his xj. booke, where he willeth, that of al other clouen beastes, the Bées to bee principallye cherished, bicause to mans vse they gather a subtile and wholsome iuyce, beyng very swéte, and besides they frame by a maruelous skill and cunning, theyr cotages of waxe vnto mans vse, that no workman (be he neuer so ingenious) can do the like. The profite also comming by them in a shorte time, if the weather hindereth not, is so greate, that they increase in a shorte time into manye swarmes, which swarmes againe increase others, so that the firste swarmes increased, they especially thrust forth from them in the moneth of May, or June, by whych meanes they cause a great increase of thé. As Varro affirmeth the same of two head Gentlemen in Spaine, which only by the means of their Bées, gayned yerely tē thousand pond (but I rather thinke fiue thousand pounde, which also is very muche) yet here is to be noted, that the swarmes of fyre yeares olde, doe seldome encrease after other swarmes of themselues, although in waxe they giue a great yelde and gayne to the owners.

¶ Of the great care and diligence of the Bees. Cap. vij.

FIrst certain Bées as the skilfull practisers do write, stand in ẏ day time at the mouthes of ẏ Hyues, diligently loking to their businesse, like warders placed at the gates of a Castel, that they maye so defend in safegarde whom they will within. In the night time they setle thēselues to rest vnto the morning, vntil one of them by humming twice or thrice about, doeth so styre them forward to flye out after the other. For if they happen to kéepe themselues in the morning within the Hyues, thē doth the same declare a tempest to insue that daye. But being a cleare and fayre morning, then do they flye forth, and returne againe to their Hiues, laden with the substaunce of the flowres on their legges, for their businesse, and this especiallye doe the yonger Bées, so that the other Bées besides do eyther carrye the water in their bils, or on the soft mossinesse of the whole bodie. The elder Bées remayning still within, do also folow their

buſineſſe, as in diligẽtly laying vp, and aptly diſtilling the ſame, as they wold diſpoſe their kindely fode. Such as be ſluggiſh & not labouring they diligently note, which for their ſluggiſhnes, they bitterly puniſh to death.

And flying abroade in a mightye winde, they marueilouſlye ſtay and guyde themſelues, by waying their bodyes down with little ſtones, caryed in their legges. They at the euening comming to reſt, do make leſſe and leſſe noyſe in the hyue, vntill one of them flyeth about, which by a like order as he moued them forewarde in the morning, euen ſo by the ſame noyſe and humming doth he procure them to take their reſt, and to be all ſilent within the hiue. If the Bées happen to ſcatter in their flying abroade, then do they call and gather them togither into a ſwarme, by the helpe of making a ſhrill ſounde, eyther with pã or baſon, or other loude cymball. They alſo followe their king whether ſoeuer he taketh his flight, who beyng wearie, and not further able to flie, they carrye hym betweene them.

Wherfore that the king may not often attempte forth with the ſwarme, for feare of loſing them, the ſkilful practiſers wil, the wings of the kings be broken off. Whiche feeling himſelfe thus depriued of his wings, will not after attempt to flye forth of his boundes, but remayning ſtill within, will ſo cauſe the other Bées to abide continually with him, not leauing the Hiue at any time after. They alſo haue counſels priuily and rulers among them.

And Ariſtotle declareth the Bées to be the cleanlyeſt amongſt all other beaſtes, bycauſe in flying abroad, they ſhed then their dung from them, leaſte anye ſauour or ſtincke of their dung be felte in their cotages or hoales. If theſe want honny at anye time, then doe they eyther kill, or driue quite away the drone Bées.

Of

¶ Of the marueilous gouernement of the kings of honny Bees, and of the obedience which they vſe to him. Cap. viij.

NAture hath not onlye committed hir lawes to bookes, the which men may lerne by, but hath eſpecially ſet forth conditions and properties, as for an example of the lyke, by the bées, whoſe kings for doubt of reuenging, haue by the prouidẽce of nature no ſtings. Whereby is to be vnderſtanded, that the kings ruling in power, thorough the lacke of their ſtings maye be by that meanes the ſlower to hurt, and offer reuengemente. Yet ſome affirme the kings to haue ſtings, but they ſuppoſe them not to vſe their ſtings. And of this Plinie maketh a doubt whether the king be armed as the other bées, or lacketh a ſting Which Columella putteth out of doubt, writing of the king ẏ he hath no ſting, vnleſſe any perhappes thinketh that big head as it were, whiche the the king carrieth in his belly, to be his ſting, with the which at no time they vſe to ſting or hurt anye. This king only do Bées reuerence, and honor him in ſuch ſort, that any of them is obedient and very ready at his bidding, to do whatſoeuer he aſſigneth them vnto. Alſo this obedience and ſeruice whiche they vſe to their king, they do not the ſame for feare of punishment, but onely of a loue which they owe vnto him, Yet they puniſh one another in ſuch ſorte, that after their ſtings be loſt, they dye forthwith. Ariſtotle writeth of two maner of kings, the one as he affirmeth to be red, which he iudgeth the better, the other king black of colour, which he confeſſeth to be leſſer of body. yet howſoeuer the kings be, they are notwithſtanding far bigger of body, thã the honny bées, & haue a brighter and goodlier head thẽ the other Bées, yet ſhorter wings. So ẏ their king created among them, goeth not any time forth of ẏ hiue, without ẏ whole ſwarm folow him. The king flying for h of the hiue at anye time, ẏ other folow him, in ſuch ſort, ẏ eche couet to flie nert him, & ioyeth to be ſæn of ẏ king in office, and wherſoeuer ẏ king ſettleth him or reſteth, there be other Bées placed like ſtrõg holds or caſtels about him. About ẏ king alſo

be placed,

certaine rulers, which wayte vpon him by a dayly anthoritie. If anye happeneth, as writeth Plinie, to breake of the kings right wing, then from the king will not the swarme after departe, as the like was rehearsed afore. Besides these, the Bées haue a maruelous order among them, if their king happen to die, for then they shal bitterly mourne for their king deade, and for the lacke of another, as such whiche cannot be guided and ruled without a king among them, and of this they be in continuall mourning. So that for the time, they carry no fode into theyr Hyues, nor flye not forth, but with a sadde bewailyng and humming, after theyr King, they heape thicke togyther aboute the deade body, and vnlesse another King increaseth by little and lyttle among them, they dye for hunger. Theyr king laboureth not', but as the other flye forthe, bee in the meane tyme as an exhorter moueth and encourageth forwarde euerye one to hys worke, by his flying aboute in the Hiue.

¶ What kinde of Bees are beste, and rather to be chosen. Cap. ix.

In this point, & for true knowledge of these, doth M. Varro discribe those Bées to be best, which be small of body, and diuerse and round, bycause they be earnest in labour, and make a thinne honny, and better endure labour, and gather their honny on hilles, but the worser Bées gather their honny of the garden floures onlye, whiche be somewhat long of bodye, lyke to waspes. Virgil doth especially commend the small Bées, beyng somwhat long, light, and clenly in their businesse, and glistering to golde. So that the greater and rounder Bée, is discommended of all writers. Although the fierce Bées are very ill, yet is their vrefulnesse, a note of the better Bées, whiche may easily be appeased, by the daylye haunting among them, for if the kepers do often handle the Hyues, then do they become gentle in in a short time.

The Bées also endure if they be diligently loked vnto, for

the space of ten yeares, and beyonde this age no swarme can passe, although the keepers supplye the Hyues yearelye with yong Bées, in the steade of the olde deade, for in the tenth yere, in a manner, of the generall death of them, the vniuersall kinde of the whole Hyue is then consumed. And therefore, that thys maye not happen throughe all the Hyues in that place you must alwayes increase your Hyues with yong Bées, which diligently Hyue in the springtime, or beginning of Sommer, when as the swarmes be first and newe thrust forth of the Hiues, and so maye the number of your Hiues be encreased. Agayne some wryte, that in the Countrey of Pontus, the beste Bées bee white, bycause they gyue theyr yelde of Honye twyce in a moneth. And Gulielmus de couchis affirmeth the beste Bées to be aboute Thermodoon in Capadocia, abyding in the Earthe, for that these doe buylde and make a tryple yelde of waxe, and giue also aboundaunce of Honny.

The foresayde Varro, affirmeth those Bées to be in healthe, which often kepe and be in a swarme togither, that be stronge & can do their businesse and worke alike, and that quicke & light in the same, beyng neyther hearie nor foule of body, or appearing dustie, such also which be not overleane of body, and that out of any of their cotages no dead bées be carried thence, e forth of their Hiues. For all these notes do declare suche like Bées, to be both euill and vnprofytable. Palladius declareth, that the best Bées may be knowen by the fulnesse or emptinesse of their vessels, for if the Hiues be full, then those Bées doth he best commende, if the Hiues be nothing so full stuffed, those Bées doeth he greatly disalowe. And he also praiseth those Bées, whiche excelleth or passeth others in the loudnesse of humming, or so abound in the great haunte of the swarme, not brought to the Hiues from farre places, so that there maye be such agrement, that they be not after feared alwaye, with the newnesse of the aire and place.

¶ VVhere the Hiues of Bees ought especially to be placed. Cap. x.

ARistotle willeth the Hiues of Bées in the winter time to be placed in a warme place, and in the hotte season of Sommer, in a colde place. Palladius Rutilius in his firste Booke of husbandrie teacheth that the fittest place for bées, is that, whiche is in a Garden, not farre or rather neare to the owners house, which by that meanes suffereth not the windes, nor the accesse of théeues or beastes.

Which also nourisheth Trées growing on the Northside of the place, the better to defend the cold ayre from them, & cleare springs or faire riuer water running by. Columella willeth the Hiues to be set open toward the south, far from noyse, & haunte of people and beastes, neyther in a hote nor colde place, for eyther of these do molest and harme the bées. Also that the hyues stande in the bottome of a valley, or if not so possible, then placed neare to the valley, the better and easier for the Bées to bring their fode gathered to their hiues, and in anye case farre from stincking puddels, ditches dung-heapes, and such like filthy stinckes, which greatly annoye and endamage the bées beyng neare hande to their hiues. M. Varro writing in his second booke vnto a huswife of the countrey, willeth hir also to set the Hiues close to hir house, and vnder some shed, & that far from ỹ noyse of formes, whiche is mente from a groue or wood, leaste through the woodde or groue neare hande, the same may giue a sounding noyse, like to that whiche men commonlye name the Eccho, whiche sounde in verye déede the Bées do greatly hate. Virgil willeth bushie trées to be planted and stand right before their hiues, like as the Peare tré is, the Peach tré, the Oake tré, many kyndes of Apple trées, the birche tré, Holy tré, the Iuy tré also, not allowed for his goodnesse, but bycause ỹ fame gineth out muche homy, and al other trées which beare no bitter floures. And he willeth these plantes and hearbes to growe neare hande, as the Rosemary, the red and damaske Rose, the white Lillie, the Violets, the Flourdelice, the Organye, the

Time

Time, the running Time, the Sauery, ſweete Maiorome, the Saffron floure, which coloureth the honny and maketh it ſmel ſweete, the beane floures, the French beane floures, the Pellylot floures, the hearbe Baulme, the white Popple floures, the Bitonie floures, the Borage and Bugloſſe floures, and manye other ſweete and wholeſome floures, not here named. But the Bore tree, the Paſticke tree, the dogge or Gatten tree, or as ſome ſuppoſe the long and high cheritree they greatly hate, for that taſting of the floures of anye of theſe, they die forthwyth. Maro willeth ſtanding waters, to be neare to their hiues, & ſo ſhallow, ẏ ſmal ſtones thrown into thē, may appeare aboue the water, & ſerue in ſtede of bridges for their often recourſe to thē, & that they may aptly ſtretch their wings abroad on the ſtones, at the heate of the ſun. The ſtādings for hiues ought to be three foote diſtant from the ground, & wittily ſtopped about with red clay, leaſt vermine, and Pyſe creepe into the hiues, and ſpoyle the honny combes. The hiues alſo oughte to be ſet a little aſūder the one from the other, leaſt by loking into them, you ſhake one another by cleauing togither, and ſo diſquiet the bées nerte to, which feare al manner of ſhaking leaſt the ſame throw not downe their weake workes of ware. And the mouthes of the hiues ought to ſtand somwhat ſtiper than the back part, leaſte rain beating in, might not lightly run out again by their entry or hole. For remedy of ẏ which, ſome make a couer ouer theyr hole ẏ better to kēpe off ẏ weather & raine. And no manner of heate ſo much harmeth them, as doth the bitter cold, & for this ẏ faces of hiues ought to be toward the winter riſing of the ſun, that the Bées may ſo receiue the warme comfort, in ẏ morning comming forth, & be the liuelier, for colde doth cauſe them to be ſluggiſh, and for that cauſe their holes ought to be very narrow, that as little colde as is poſſible, may enter into them, & ſo narrowe made, that the Bées within may receiue the encreaſe but of one Bée at once. For by that meanes can neither the Bætil, butterflie, nor great moath enter, to annoye them. Beſides for their often recourſe home, Maro willeth to make two or three commings into the hiue, somewhat diſtant aſunder.

¶ What things Bees doe chiefly abhorre, or greatly hate. Cap. xj.

TO bées, is that (named the Eccho) vngratefull or much displeasing, which as Plinie writeth, doth greatly feare them, through the straunge sounde rebounding againe, and the mist also doth muche molest and trouble them, besides the spinner through hir web hanging downe before the Hiue, and the sluggishe butterflie (which Plinie nameth dishonorable) that is two wayes pestiferous, as the one, when he spoyleth the ware, and dungeth within the Hiue, and the other, breading Magottes or little wormes within the combes. They greatly hate oyle, like as all the kindes of the other Bées doe, and a stinking sauoure, which euidently appeareth by that kind of herbe named Mugworte, that they especially hate, because the same is of a strãge stincke to them. The hornettes also of the like sorte creast, but bazer of kynde, they greatlye feare, for that to the Hornets the Hony Bées are a speciall foode. Also they be meate to swallowes to sparrowes, and to all other small byrdes.

The frogs besides, they do greatly feare, which only lye in waite for them, both in Marishes, running springs, shallowe waters, and little ditches, and the like doe the Toades lye in wayte for the Bées, whiche destroye manye of them. And the shéepe doe greately trouble the Honnye Bées, if so be they happen to fall or lighte into the Woll of they^r backes, out of whyche, they cannot easylye wynde or gette themselues againe.

And if any happeneth to boyle or seathe Riuer Creauises, or sea Crabbes neare to the Hiues, and that the Bées féele the sauour therof, they die forthwith.

By

¶ By what ſignes men may know, when the hony Bees are diſeaſed, and how men may cure them. Cap xij.

THis is a ſpeciall argument and note, that the Bées, are diſeaſed, if that they flye ſcattering in the ſwarme, if they kéep not their proper colour, but be (as it were) of a ſtrange and cõtrarie colour: if they alſo are ouer leane, if they appeare duſkie and hairy, and that out of their cottages bée dead Bées carryed thence. When al theſe notes and ſignes are eſpied in the Bées, it is then highe time to ſéeke remedye for them, leaſte helpe (by longer running) be ſought too late. Therfore Palladius willeth to miniſter the kernels of Pomegranats, bruſed and mixed with ſwéete and pleaſaunt Wine, and the ſame powred into the chanels or gutters of halfe canes, ſet nere to ẏ mouths of hiues, or honny, with Roſe leaues well beaten togither, and ſo miniſtred to them, or the berries of the Barnice trée bruſed, and mixed wt Honny: for lacke of theſe helpes, a man may make a ſmoake of drie Dre or Cowe dung, whiche ſmoake muche delyghteth and comforteth them, ſo that the ſame be often vſed vnto Harueſt.

But if throughe the Waggots or little wormes of the Butter-flyes the Bées be diſeaſed, Rutilius then iudgeth it beſte, to ſet a braſen Candleſticke, or ſuche like veſſell, with lighte burning in it at Euening, within the hyue, that to the ſame light (ẏ Butter-flyes gathering, and flying about) may ſo fall down into it, and be deſtroyed.

Ariſtomachus writeth, that the diſeaſed Bées maye bée couered in this maner, if that all the corrupt combe within the hiue be taken forth, and freſhe foode anewe put in of the whole. and the hiue after ſmoaked within. Alſo he affirmeth, that Roſemarie ſodden with water and honny togither, and beyng colde, poured into halfe canes or Elder ſtickes, made hollow like gutters, and the ſame ſet by the mouthes of the hiues, for the Bées to drinke on, doth recouer the Bées again. Hyginius affirmeth that

that

that eyther the Dre or mans vrine set in like manner (as aboue saide) by the mouths of the hyues, doth also recouer the diseased Bées. Mowe all these, and suche like muste the kéeper of the Bées doe, whiche is bothe sober and chaste, and fédeth not vppon sowre or tarte meates, nor filthy or strong of sauour, nor any salt meates.

¶ What manner of person, the keeper of Bees ought to be. Cap, xiij.

THE Bées for that they muche abhorre all filthye stinkes and smells, Palladius willeth the kéeper of them to eschewe diligently al strong and yll smelling sauoures, one also that delighteth to be chaste of body, and frée from filthinesse, among these not breathing sowrely, or of a stinking breath, not sweating, nor sauouring of sweat, not one besides of wicked conditions, or suche a person as standing among the flight of the Bées, doth not earnestly moue and procure them to fly to him, or as one stinged endeuoreth to defend himselfe from them, but rather as a flatterer among his acquaintance, and children, hath learned to entreate, and please the Bées by a more gentle manner. He also whiche mindeth to haue also in a readinesse the hiues vnto his vse, in which he may receiue forthwith the rude youth of the swarmes put forth, which if they be not diligently preserued, they flye quite awaye at the full heate of Sunne. But how these hiues ought aptly to be prepared, shall hereafter be taught in the fifteenth Chapiter.

If the Dorre Bées, or Bées without sting, be ouer manye in the Hiue, and that you woulde gladly ridde them forth, then do on this manner: first take and plucke off the wings of one of those Dorre Bées, which lay or put within the Hiue, and incontinent the Honny Bées espying the same, will fal vppon the other Dorre Bées, and both kill and driue them quite away.

By

¶By what ſubtil meanes, the ſwarmes come forth, may be preſerued from flying quite awaye. Cap. xiij.

PALLADIVS in his ſecond Booke writeth, that ẏ ſwarms of the bonny Bées fly awaye eſpecially in the moneth of June. But with vs the ſame ofttner happeneth in the moneth of May, as hathe bin noted by ſundrye, diuerſe times, eſpecially if the yong Bées be ſounde and hartie within the Hyues. Therefore the képer muſte diligently loke to the Hyues, and at no time be abſent, eſpecially when the young Bées increaſe and abound in the Hyues, for if they be not then carefully loked vnto, and ſtayed by the diligence of the képer, they al fly quite away. For ſuch is the nature and propertie of the Bées, that aſſone as the ſwarms of the yong Bées, are bred with the Kings, and that they be ſtrong & able to flye away, then as diſdayning the ſwarms of the olde Bées, they ſéke the more gouernment. For that they be ſuche liuing things, that delight to rule alone, not ſéking ayde and counſell of the elder Bées: and therefore do the newe kings flye forth, with the young ſwarmes following them, which for a day or two before their flying away, remaine heaping togither before the mouths of the Hyues, & right vnder the Hiues, ſo that by their comming forth, and heaping in ſuche order, they properly ſhewe the deſire of a newe place, and be as yet contented to remaine thereabout, if ſo be the képer prouide for them a place and an apt Hiue. But if they haue no képer to loke diligently to them, then as it were by an iniurie repulſed, they after ſéke a newe place. That this may not happen, let then the warye and diligent képer, loke circumſpectlye to the Hyues in the Spring time, aboute the eight houre of the daye, (when as the ſwarmes are not yet flowen away,) that he maye the diligenter marke and ſée the flying oute and comming in of the yong Bées.

Now the readineſſe of ẏ Bées in flying away, is known two waies, as ẏ firſt is, whē for certaine daies before, in a maner at ẏ ſetting of the Sun, they plentifully or abundantly gather on a heape righte before the mouthe of the Hyue, like vnto greate

clusters

clusters of Grapes, and doe hang togither on heapes one vpon another.

The other note is, that when they be minded within three daies after to flye awaye, they make as meruellous noise and sturring to and fro within the hiues at euening, as Souldiours at the Alarme within a Castell, whiche you maye easilye knowe, (this readinesse of them) if that you lay your eare to ech hiue. And when some of the Bees are flowen awaye, then doe those waite for the others, vntill the whole swarme be come together. That the Bees fly not awaye, Plinie teacheth in the 21. Booke of his Naturall Hystorie, that the hiues ought to be annointed about with ỹ iuyce of ỹ herb named Balme. Also other affyrme, that the swarme to settle and stay againe through the onely throwing of fine dust on them, if so be the same be throwen on light, and that ouer the bees. Some beside affirme, that the Bees will not flye awaye, if that the dung of the first calfe of any Cowe, be smeared about the mouths of the hiues. Plinie writeth, that by the only binding of the fresh white Vine (running in hedges) rounde about the bodies of the Hyues, it stayeth the swarme from flying away.

¶ Of the Bees newe settled in a swarme togyther, and taken or recouered agayne Cap. xv.

When the Bees are nowe in a tumulte in the ayre, by throwing fine earth on high ouer the Bees, or ringing a basen or ket le, they be with the shrill sound made astonied, that they maye the lower settle downe neare to the keeper, whiche if the same happen to be on the braunch of a tree, or on a graft or young set, then with a very sharpe sawe, gently sawe that off, and laye it on the grounde, and spedily set a Hiue on the same prepared for the purpose. For by that meanes (without doubte) will the whole swarme flye vp to the toppe and head of the Hiue. Yet it often happeneth, that they doe not wholy cleaue on a heape to the braunch of a tree, but to the stocke or body of the tree, whych by

by that meanes muste nedes be cutte by a greater lorde, so that not able to be recouered by this meanes, the swarme muste be quickly swepte off, either with the hand, or with a Gose wing, that they may so fall togither into the hiue. If the swarme happen to be clustred togither on the top of a tree, so high, that they cannot be climed vnto, to take them downe, then after the shaking of them into the Hiue (turned vppe) either with a pole or high forke, the hiue must spedily be turned down to the earth. And if they be not thus taken or recouered, yet if the King shal be still in the Hiue, then doth the swarme fly in againe, if he remayneth not, then wil none of the swarme abide in the hiue, but flye forthwith vnto the former place. Wherfore, that they may be moued to abide, you muste then sprinckle the hiue with water and hony togither, and couer the same within with ỹ greene Nettle, or rather the greene Fennell, or some such swete herbe, annointed a little with Hony, and after set at the Euening in their proper place. For the hiue in the day time, after the recouering thus of the Bees, may not be stirred vntil the Euening, that the Bees so quietly resting all that night, may in the morning leisurely go forth. But for three daies togither in a manner, muste the keper dayly loke, whether the swarme kepeth belowe in the Hiue, for if it doth, then are the Bees purposed to flye awaye. And if none of al these remedies, may yet moue the Bees to stay and tarry in the hiue, then be-smoke the hiue with flare, and they will after enter in and abide in the hiue. Which so staying in the hiues, set at the Euening in his proper place. Here learne a farther instruction, that if the swarme of Bees cannot be gathered and recouered togither all at one time, then may you gather the swarme at two or more times togither, and alwaies put eche part gathered vnder the hiue. If it happeneth that you haue gotten the King, with a part of the swarme, then will all the others some come to hiue (without further trauaile) of their owne accorde. If the Bees also be entred into the hollowe of a tree, then to the hole, whiche they vse to go in and out at, as their proper dore, sette a prepared hiue, and beneath their hole, neare to the rote and bottome of the hollow (as you can

gelle) boare another bigge hole, that ye may wel put in a smoke of Brimstone to them, whiche may so cause all the Bées to fly out at their hole into the Hiue, set ouer the mouth of it. For no better deuise or inuẽtion can be had in this matter, than by such a smoake made. If the same hollowe trée be so thinne, that it may easily be sawed asunder, then with a sharpe sawe lette that hollowe parte be cutte asunder, bothe aboue and beneath, and after couering it with a cleane sheete, carrie the swarme home, which at euening couer with a newe Hiue sprinckled with water and honny mixed togither. For so they will tarrye the willinglier, being all shaken forth of the body of the trée, and couered with the Hiue. Besides the hearbe Pugwort (whiche the Bées by a naturall hatred do abhorre) doth chase them with the onely smell from place to place.

¶ Which are the best and fittest Hiues for the Honny Bees Cap. xvj.

PALLADIVS writeth, that the best Hiues be those, which be made of the barkes and light corke of trées, bicause they be neither too colde in the Winter time, nor too hote in the Sommer. And of this, those Hiues whiche be wroughte and made of the small Osier or Willow trée, or of the Vine stickes knit togither, or Canes cleft in the middes (whiche be of like condition to the barke) wroughte close togither, and stopped close aboute wyth flockes and clay, tempered togither with water and salte, may aptly serue, if you will. But if neither of those fashioned Hiues like you, then may you make the Hiues of the woodde of a hollowe trée, or of light bourdes made square, and stowpyng somewhat afore. The worste Hiues be those, which be made of turfes or earth, bycause they be ouer hote in the Sommer, and ouer colde in the Winter. There be other two kinds of hiues, as the one made of drie hard Cow dung, and the other of tiles. Of whiche the one doth Celsus rightly condemne, bycause the same is so lightly burned, and the other he alloweth, although he dissembleth the speciall commoditie of it, bycause the same,

if néede

ſt nede requireth, cannot eaſily be remoued and carried into an other place. And among theſe, I ſuppoſe oure ſorme of Hiues here in Englande, are not altogither to be diſallowed, although they be in like daunger, to be eaſily burned, as the other Hiues aboue taughte, in that they be made with ſtraiwe. But to be briefe, for a greate ſwarme you ought to haue in a readineſſe a greate hiue, and for a ſmall ſwarme a little Hiue. And the Hiue alſo oughte to be a fote and a halfe, or two fote high, and in breadth aboue two fote and a halfe, or ſomewhat larger. Hauing beſides two very ſmall and narrowe holes, ſomewhat aſunder, and ſo little ought the mouths to be, that neyther Bée-tle, Butterflie, gret Moth, Hamble Bées, Euet nor Mouſe may enter in, to ſpoile the Honny combes. Some ſuppoſe, or rather affyrme of experience, that the Bées are delighted with this cloſeneſſe, in that they more ioy to do their workes and buſineſſe in the darke, than otherwiſe

¶ Of the clenlineſſe and ſweeteneſſe of the keeper of Bees, and howe Hiues ought to be fenced aboute, and prepared within. Cap. xvij.

The képer of Bées which mindeth to handle and loke into hiues, ought the day before to refraine the veneriall acte, not a perſon fearefull, nor comming to the hiue with vnwaſhed handes and face. And one that oughte to refraine in a manner from all ſmelling meates, poudered meates, fryed meates, and all other meats that doe ſtinke, like as the Lékes, the Onions, the Garlike, and ſuche like, whiche the Bées greatlye abhorre. Beſides, to be then ſwéte of body, and clenly in apparell, minding to come to their hiues, for in all clenlineſſe and ſwétneſſe the Bées are muche delighted. Nowe thus prepared & in a readineſſe, open ẏ hiues firſt of the Bées, about the. viij. or x. day of Aprill, being then a cleare & warme day, & purge the hiues of all ſuch filth which be gathered in them all the winter before, like as Spiders webs, which oughte eſpecially to be wiped awaye, becauſe they corrupt the combes, not with hands, but w̄ a goſe wing, the ſame ought to be done. After that, the Hiue oughte to

be ſmoaked with Dre or Cowe dung, for in that (as it were, by an affinitie of the kinde) do the Bées greatly delight. The little wormes alſo, whiche ſome name Waggots, that breede in the combes, throughe the blowing of the Butterflies, and alſo the Butter-fyes ought to be killed and purged oute of the hiue. If the combes happen to fall throughe infection or corruption in them, then make a ſmoake with the drie dung and marowe of an Dre or Cowe mired togither, that the ſauour may go vppe to them, whiche for that time will cure the weake combes, ſtrengthen the Bées, & cauſe thē to worke the luſtier afterward. And from the beginning of May, vnto the laſt of June, ỳ hiues ought then to be diligently loked vnto, that the yong ſwarmes flye not away. Alſo from the tenth of June, vnto the tenth of Auguſt, the hiues ought to be opened now & then, & to be ſmoked with ſuch like as afore is taught. Whiche althoughe it be grieuous for the time to Bées, yet the ſame is very profitable, and ſtrengtheneth them. And from the beinyng of the Dog dayes, vnto the eightéenth of September, ought the Bées to be carefully loked vnto and defended, from the violence of the Hornet Bées, which often awaite before the mouthes of the Hiues, to ſet vppon and eate the Honny Bées. Howe the kéeper in a fayre ſunny daye, ought to cleanſe the Hiues of al maner annoyances as before is taught, and diligently to ſtop the chincks, or clefts about, ſauing the mouthes of the Hiues, with Dre dung & clay mired togither. And this ought to be done, for two or thrée dates before the change of the Mone, the better to defend the Butterflye and others, from créeping in. The Hiues beſides ought to haue two bigge ſticks cleane ſcraped, and running a croſſe from ſide to ſide, and ſprinckled rounde about within, and ſwéete and pleaſant wine, or elſe the ſticks to be harde rubbed ouer, with the gréene braunches of the Fennell or other ſwéete ſmelling herbs, or wt a little hony & leaues of the Pere-trée, togither, or with the branches of the herb Time flouring, or Sauerie, or Maiorame, or the hearbe Balme, and Honny togither. Some annoint the ſticks and hiue within, with the ſwéete creame of the newe Cowe milke, or with water and Honnye ſodden togyther,

togither, and that ſprinckled aboute within the hyue, that the Bées maye be the rather and ſoner moued to tarrie and dwell ſtil in the Hiues.

¶ How Bees lacking honnie may be fedde in that preſent neede. Cap. xviij.

BEcauſe the boyſterouſneſſe of the ayre doth ſometimes conſtraine the Bées to abyde in their hiues, and that they may not only fæde of Honny, but at the ryſing of the conſtellation (named Vergiliæ) they maye be fed and cheriſhed, and the ſame done in this manner without greate coſt. As firſte, if you take the number of ten figges, ſeething them in fire pintes of fayre conduite or ſpring water, vnto a pynte waſted, whych after ſet the one ſide of the hiue within, laying many ſmal ſtickes a croſſe ouer ẏ Lycour, that thoſe may ſerue in ſtead of bridges, the ayter for them to drinke of the Licour, without drowning in the ſame. Others wyll to ſeeth Honny and water togither, & the ſame to be poured into diſhes ſet at the one ſide of the Hiue, in the whiche they will to put fine carded woll, that the Bées maye the better drincke now and then, and be not cloyed with to much drinking of the licour, by lighting into it. Others take figs & raiſins beating thē togither, and after boyling them in the ſwéte lycour named Cuyte, they poure into diſhes, couering ẏ ſame with Daten ſtrawes a croſſe. Others alſo will to take a little Hony, putting into the ſame a fewe Date cornes, that the Bées lighting on them, may ſo kepe their wings from wetting in the licour. Now all theſe meanes may well ſuffiſe to cheriſh and fæd the bées in the Winter time, lacking then fode, beyng ſet neare to the mouthes of the Hiues. So that if a longer hunger oppreſſeth them, then with the hiues faſt by the entring in, ſet little gutters made of halfe canes, or greate elder ſtickes cleft, into which poure of the ſwéte licours aboue taught, for by that meanes may they be wel recouered and ſtrengthned in the deepe of Winter, when their fode fayleth them. Some wil to put freſh birdes cleane drawne, or the fleſhe of a Henne fine-

ly ſhred into hiues, for the Bées to fæde and ſucke vpon in the dæpe of Winter, & the fine feathers alſo they will to put into ẏ Hiue, that they may giue them a warmth to the Bées lying in them. And others alſo will to put the meate of rofted Chickens into their Hiues, to fæde and ſucke vppon, and not the boanes withall, leaſt the ſauour of the bones after the meate eaten off, might annoy the bées by lying ſtill in the hiues, in that they ſo greatly abhorre all ſowre and ſtinking ſauors. Alſo theſe kinds of fleſh ordered (as aboue ſayde) may well ſerue the Bées in another drie Sommer, when as the moſt floures are then faded or quite gone away. Here note, that in the Spring and Sómer time, the bée-hiues ought to be loked vnto thrice in the moneth, gently ſmoking the Bées, to cleanſe the Hiues of al maner filth, and to ſwæpe forth the wormes. Alſo Menecrates willeth the kæper of Bées, to kill the king blacke of colour, whiche by hys malice diſquieteth the other king, and corrupteth the Hiue, in that he flieth out alone, or with a company of ẏ bées folowing. So by that meanes (as Virgil writeth) ſhall the battel of Bées be ſtayed. Palladius writeth, that the ſwarmes be increaſed in the moneth of May, and that in the outmoſt ſides of the combes be the drone Bées bred, which ought to be killed, in that thoſe do muche diſquiet the reſt of the ſwarme. The Butterflies alſo do abounde, which he willeth diligently to kill, for their greate annoyaunce to the honny Bées.

About the beginning of Nouember ought the Hyues then to be cleared of their filth, ſo that al the Winter following they may neyther be remoued nor opened. And this may not be done but in a warme ſunny daye, the combes maye not be touched with hands, but with the feathers of a ſtiffe gooſe wing, or ſuch bigge foule. After that to ſtoppe the chinkes round about wyth Ore dung and clay finely laboured togither, and to lay ſtrawe thicke ouer the toppes of the Hiues, the better to defende the Bées from the cold and tempeſtes.

How

¶ How the dead Bees may be restored to life againe. Cap xix.

THe képer of bées ought to foreſée and take héede, that the Bées perysh not through ouer great heate, or ouer mighty cold. If at any time by a ſodaine ſhowre in the ſéeking for foode, Bées happen to be beaten downe, or nipped wyth a ſodaine colde (which ſeldome ſo commeth to paſſe that the Honny bées are ſo decéyued,) that harmed with the droppes, they lye grouelyng and flatte on the earth, as dead in a manner, then gather the Bées togyther, putting them into ſome veſſel for the nonce, which after ſet in a warm chamber or Parlourc, & couer warm ymbers, beyng ſomewhat more than hote, on the Bées, whiche gently ſhake with the aſhes, but in ſuche ſorte that you touche them not wyth your hande. And ſetting the Bées in the ſunne, and neare to their hiues, they will after recouer, and flie again into their cotages.

¶ Of the battel that Bees ſometime haue among themſelues. Cap. xx.

VErgill writeth, that the Bées ſometimes minding to fighte, do haſtily bruſt out of the Hiues, and as it were in ciuill battels among themſelues, do fight lyke ſtrangers one againſt the other, & ſmite eagerly in their fight one at an other. If ſo be one hyue hath eſpecially two kings bred vp in the ſame, whych very well may be knowne, when as the bées cluſtered and heaped togither, doe repreſente or repreſſe as it were the forme of two beardes hangyng downe. Now they? readineſſe to fight is knowen, when in the ayre is heard a greate ſounde and noyſe among the Bées lyke to the manner of Trumpets, whiles they fiercely and cruelly fighte togither among thēſelues, & in this battell they glitter with the wings, ſharpen the ſtings with their beakes, beare forth their breaſtes, and about the king they gather and ſwarme. So that they ſhoute wyth great,

great noyse, flying and dashing togither, and that in heapes and rounde companies mixed or ioyned togither, and greate is the noyse made among them. And to be shorte, in this strong and eager battell, many of them fall headlong downe, and that thicker then haile stones to the ground.

The kings themselues in the meane time flying in the middel frontes, doe fight with a fierce courage within themselues, and they also are seene to flie hither and thither among thicke heapes and swarmes of the Bées, (like as valiaunte Cappitaines are wont to do in the time of a battell) with their glistering wings and brakes, beating downe of the swarmes, here & there and on eche side of them, of both partes. So that of themselues not giuyng ouer this eager battell, untill the one part be forced to turne the backe to the other, and flye away with expedition. Therfore ẏ this doubtful battel in the meane time may be ceased and quieted betwene them, the wise practisers wyll that the kæper of Bées, do staye and appease this broyle of thẽ, by the casting of fine earth ouer the Bées, whiles they be thus fighting, which (as the wise affirme) of experience doth forthewith pacifie the great stomackes and courages of both partes. But if this auayleth not, then with honny and water sodden togither, or raysons in like order, or with any other swæte licour sprinckled on them, is their furie appeased, whiche doth as it were with the pleasaunt swæteneſſe, quiet the irefulneſſe of ẏ warriours, and wyth the same in this controuersie they are marueloully appeased. If neyther of these remedies do yet prevaile, then let the keper marke diligentlye those Bées whyche fyghte in the fronte, and bee moste eager Cappitaines, that bee maye kill them with expedition, for by that meanes, and with the other remedies aboue taughte, maye the battels and fight of the warriours be throughly ceased.

Now after the Bées are thus quieted, and the swarme setled rounde on some græne bowe nerte hande, then marke whether the whole swarme hangeth downe like a cluster of grapes, whiche so sering, declareth there to bee eyther one king or two, by good agræment reconciled, whiche let alone

on

on such wise, vntil they flye backe vnto their proper home. But if the swarme shal be deuided into two or many round clusters, then iudge that there be yet manye Captaynes lefte, and that their yre is not ceased: and in those partes, where you especially sée the bées to cluster moste thicke and rounde togyther, there diligently séeke out the Captaynes. Yet annoynt your hand before with the iuyce of the hearbe Baulme, that touching or handling the Bées, they flye not hither and thither, after which put in your fingers gently, and seuering the Bées asunder, seke diligently among them, vntil you finde out the author and procurer of the battell, whiche you oughte likewise to kill. Vergill writeth, that the kings sometimes fly forth for a vaine delight, to sport them flying in the aire, which you may easily stay and let, if that you pluck of the kings wings, that he canno t afterward flye.

¶ How Bees, may be recouered and founde againe. Cap. xxj.

If it so happeneth that bées are flowen away, & that you be in doubte whether they be lodged neare hande, or farre off: Palladius doth instructe and teache many goodly wayes to finde them againe. First he teacheth to take red leade, or red Oker infused in water, or any other colour, stayning, and to carry the same wyth you in a little shallow dishe. Unto suche a spring or rūning water as the honny bées haunte, especially in ẏ moneth of Aprill. And there sitting downe, awayte the comming of the Bées to drinke, which after they be come, and there drinkyng, stayne in the meane whiles such bées, with your rush coloured redde at the ende, as you may well retche with the same, sitting yet stil, and watching the comming againe of those Bées marked to drinke, whiche if they shortlye returne, then is it an euidente note and token, that their lodging and cottages be neare hande, but if those Bées are long before they returne and come againe to the place, then maye you suppose and iudge them to be farre off, and the distaunce you may gesse, according to their

long tarrying and sone comming againe. That you maye easily finde the place where the Bées lodge, whether the same bée farre or neare hand, Palladius teacheth the same wittily, in this manner.

First he willeth to take one whole ioynt of a bigge cane or Elder sticke stopped at ỳ one end, and the other end left open, to annoynt within, with a little honny, whiche laye neare to that spring or running water, that the Bées daylye haunte vnto.

When Bées resort to the same, and that certayne be entred within the quil through the sauor therof, then stop the hole with your thumb, letting one of ỳ Bées afterward to flye forth, whiche dylygently marke, and follow that way it flyeth, for it will shewe you part of the way to their home. And after you can see the same no further, then quickly set forth another be, whose slight in like manner marke, and followe after, for that it maye also shewe parte of the way vnto their home. And so let flie the bées by one and one, vntil they bring you vnto the place of the swarme. Nowe if the same place be déepe in the earthe, then with a smoake made eyther of drye flare or Brimstone, drive ỳ Bées out, and when the swarme is come forthe, then ring on a bason or shrill panne, for being by and by feared with the shrill sounde of the same, the swarme eyther lighteth on a yong trée, or on the opener bowe of a bigge trée, which so founde out, couer ouer with a hiue prepared for the nonce. But if the swarme be placed in the hollowe of a trée, and hauing bowes, or in the stocke of the same trée, then with a verye sharpe sawe (if the meanes of the same will giue leaue) cutte it a sunder. And in such sort, that the parte emptie aboue the bées be first cut, and the parte beneath in which it séemeth the Bées to be lodged, to be like cut a sunder, and the stocke thus cut asunder, at both the endes, couer with a faire shéete, leaste any large clifts appeare after the cutting, whiche also annoynt with honnye, for the better staying in of the bées, and after carrye the same home, which place by your other hiues making smal holes in ỳ same,

for

for they flying in and out (as afore was taught) in the ordering of the other hiues. But it behoueth the diligent searcher, to chose the morning times for ỳ finding out of Bees, wherby you may haue the space & libertie of the day before you, to finde out ỳ resort of Bees. For by loking late after the, it falleth out so, that although the Bees are neare hande, yet bycause they haue then done their busie and careful labour, they flye no longer abrode to seeke foode, nor yet resorte to drinke.

Throughe whiche it so commeth to passe, that the searcher after Bees knoweth not the nhowe neare, or far off, the swarm is from the spring or running water. Some take the iuyce of the hearb Baulme in the Spring time, and annoint the same round about the hiue, whereby the sauour of the iuyce may cleaue and abide on the vessell, whiche afterwarde being fayre withim, sprinckle aboute with a little honny, setting the same hiue downe neare to the woode or grone of trees fast by that spring or water rūning by it, and after the same be filled with a swarme, carry it gently home. Yet doth not this like, but in such places where the swarmes of Bees do abounde, for that oftentimes it so hapneth, that vnlesse the hiues be dailye watched, that the goers by do take them away. But to lose sundrie hiues, greatly hindreth not, so that you may in the mean whiles enioy one or two of them safe.

Nowe hitherto hathe beene sufficientlye taughte, suche remedies and helpes, as necessarily serue, to the taking, and recouering of Bees lost, and otherwise to finde oute straunge swarmes.

¶ That the Bees sting no person, comming neare their Hiues. Cap. xxi.

PLinie in his twentith book writeth, that the hearb Sperage, bruised and mired with oyle, and annoynted with the same, doth defende the person from being stinged, by comming nygh to their hiues. And in his .xxvij. booke he also wryteth, that

if any happeneth to be stinged by a Scorpion, that he shall neuer after be stinged of any Bée, but yet being stinged, he teacheth to drinke the iuyce of Hearbe-grace and Rue mired with wine, and to lay the leaues also in plaister forme on the stinged placed. In the 21. booke he writeth ẏ like, that bées stings are by nature venomous, against ẏ which he teacheth to take & vse the iuyce of Mallowes, or the iuyce of Iuie leaues, and to annoint eyther of the two, on the stinged places, as a souerain remedy. And in the 23. booke, he teacheth wyne for a remedy, as boyled with bay leaues, and after drunke. In the 24. booke he teacheth to take a drop of that molten, whiche the homy Bées make at the entrye of the Hiue, to be a like remedy, as of the water Bezoar to be vsed against venemous bittes. Auicen in his seconde rule teacheth, that the decoction of the March Mallowes wyth vineger or wine, and the same anoynted on the stinged places, to be a perfit remedie.

Whiche also in his fouth rule affirmeth, that the Honnye Bée hath like dispositions to the waspe, saving that they leaue their stings behinde thē: wherfore for remedie of ẏ wasps, you may vse those which we haue afore taught against the stings of Bées.

¶ VVhen and howe, the Hiues ought to be gelded. Cap. xxii).

PAlladius Rutilius in his first booke teacheth, that the hiues of Bées ought not to be gelded, before you will consider and sée whether they be rype, vnto the comming of the true Honny, whyche in a manner (as hee teacheth) commeth to vse in the moneth of June, or as others affirme, in the ende of Auguste, vnto the midle of September.

Now there be certaine notes and tokens, by whych we trye and fynde out the ripenesse of them, whiche be these, firste if the hiues be ful, then do the Honny Bées drive forth the yole drone Bées out of the Hiues, and there is also hearde within a small or shrill humming of the Bées for that the emptie cottages of the

the combs, as they were hollow buildings, do receiue a sound & noise, procured then bigger, so that when there is heard a big & hoarse sound of ẏ hũming of them, then is it not yet mẽt to geld ẏ combs. Varro writeth, ẏ it is thẽ time to gelde hiues, when as you sæ within, ẏ the Bées hãg clustring round, & ẏ the holes of the hony combes be couered ouer, as it were with thin caules, for then be they full of honny. Now the day of gelding the hiues ought to be done timely in the morning, when as the Bées are astonied throughe the colde aire, and not done in the heate of the day, when they be procured to fly forth of ẏ hiues, and being then very angry, to sting those persons which come to the hiues. The maner of gelding ẏ hiues is on this wise, first stop the holes of the hiues, that the Bées passe not forth, with grasse or some other hearbe, after that putte vnder fine linnen ragges, or strawe, making a little smoake with the same, whiche smoake so flying vppe, causeth the Bées after to breake & leane their clustering togither.

After these, with two instruments or toles of yron, made for the only purpose, of a foote and a halfe long, or rather somewhat longer made, of whiche the one ought to be a long knife, and broade of either side the edge, with a haste, and hauing a crooked file on the one end. The other at the beginning plaine, and very sharpe, whereby with this thẽ combes may the readier and quicklier be cutte downe, with that other instrument scraped cleane, and whatsouer filth falleth off, drawne awaye, and throwne aside. But where the hiue of the hinder parte, or parte behinde, shall haue no voide place emptie, then make a smoake (as Varro commaundeth) with Galbanum and drie Ore dung, which ought to be made in a earthẽ fuming pan, filled with quicke coles, or a pan of earth with a narrow mouth, and a handle like to it. So that the one part oughte to be sharper or narrower vpwarde, by whiche the smoake may passe by the little holes, and the other parte where the coles are, broader, and with a large mouth of the one side of it, by which the person may blowe the coles: Nowe suche a pot when it is set within the hiue, and the smoake stirred vp to the Bées, whiche

by and by not quieted with the sauour, flie vnto the forepartes of the hiue, & sometimes flie quite oute of the hiue, wherby any may looke into the Hiue without harme, in a maner, to the person. If there happen to be two swarmes in one hiue, then are there also two kindes or formes of honny combes. For euerye company of Bées in agréement togither, doth fashion & frame the ware, as liketh them best. But all the honny combes being hollowe wrought, and a little cleauing to the sides of the hiue, do hang, whereby they may not touch the floure or bourde, for that otherwise it causeth the swarmes to flye quite away. Yet the forme of their ware is such, as the condition of their cottages is. For that some Bées doe make both square and rounde spaces, and some long, so that eche frameth, as it were certain formes in the combes, according to his kinde. So that the honny combs, are not founde alwaies alike in fashion, but these combes of what forme soeuer they be, are not to be taken all out of the hiues. For in the beginning of Haruest, whiles the fieldes yet flourishe, take a fift parte of the combes, but after, when Winter is at hande, then leaue a thirde parte behinde.

Palladius willeth the hiues to be gelded in the moneth of October, and that a third part be left behind. Yet consider, that if there be store, to take the more: if but a meane, then the halfe part of that leaue for the winter time: if the cottages appeare but halfe full, then take nothing away. But Varro teacheth, that a third part of the combes maye be taken away, & ỳ other parte left for the winter, although the combes be ful of honny. If you fear (saith he) a sharp winter to follow, thē take nothing at all: of the same mind is the learned Vergil in this. But the expert practisers of our time in such matters, do affirme, that ỳ honny ought to be taken awaye but once in the yeare, & this in the end of the moneth of August, vnto the middle of Septēber. But the ware being corrupt, then, both before and at any time maye be taken forth of the hiues. Also as touching the honny which ỳ Bées giue, whether you maye take awaye either little or much, must be considered according to the smalnesse or plentifulnesse of ỳ hony being in the hiue. And according to ỳ smalnesse

nesse or greatnesse also of the swarm to be nourished, so that a-boue the fourth part of the combes may not be taken from any hiue. Yet this order may not be vsed alike in countries, because a man must consider the dealing with the hiues, according to ỹ multitude of flowres, & plentifulnesse of food for the Bées. If ỹ warie combes hanging down do run into a length, then with ỹ same yron tole which is made like to a knife, being oftētimes dipped in water, that the ware cleaue not to it, nor that the combs remaining may be harmed, & the hiue holdē on the one side cut the combs away. After this, put both your armes into the hiue, gathering together, and taking forth the combs. But if the combes hang ouerthwart in the hiue, then must you vse your scraping yron, that the combes of the further side thrust together, may so be cut away. Also the old & corrupt combs are to be takē forth, the whole and full of hony to be especially left. And if there be any yong Bées in them, those kepe or preserue to increase the swarm in that hiue. After that, carry al the store of the hony combes into one place, whereas you mind to make the hony, & stop diligently the sides and edges of the hiues roūd about, that none of the Bées may enter in, which for the hony and ware taken away, do eagerly seeke after, and finding the same, do vtterly consume the same if they may.

Therfore, ere the former matters must a smoake be made, & that (at the entry) or mouth of the hiues, that the Bées allaying to fly in, may through the smoke be driuen to flye backe again. Now after the hiues be gelded, and that anye shall haue ouerthwart or crolled combes at the entrance of the hiue, those then shall be so conuerted, that the parts behind maye be emptied & left void for another time. So that when they shal be next gelded the old combs rather than the new, are to be taken forth, & the ware renewed, for that the older the warie combes are, so muche the worser they be.

If it happeneth, that the hiue be so made, that the same may not be remoued out of ỹ place, then ought you to geld first the hinder parte, and after the foreparte: and this especially ye ought to be done afore fiue a clocke in the morning, and after

nine

nine of the clocke at night, or in the verie morrowe. Howe the Bées when they knowe this, all come to fill the emptie place, so that after they haue repaired and filled the same, and fulfilled all the reste aboute it, then flye they to the forepart, and do worke in like order. By whiche we may euidently learne, that they haue filled the same empty place also, by their abiding stil there. Besides these, as the great plentie of honny, doeth cause sluggishnesse in the Bées, euen so doeth the much abatement, and exceeding taking awaye of their honny, bothe dull the quickenesse and diligence of them, and cause them also to bee sluggishe.

¶ What the honny is, and howe from the hiues the same maye be prepared to vse. Cap. xxiiij.

As we firste gather the honny from the combes, so do we the ware for the comforte of the light, and other commoditie besides. Howe what the honny is, and howe the same taken from hiues, maye be prepared to vse, shall hereafter bee taughte.

Firste the learned Isidore writeth, the honny to be of the deawe of some lyquide matter, and affirmeth also the same to be founde sometimes in the leaues of the greate Canes. To whiche in a manner doth Publius Maro agrée in this verse, writing, that hitherto the heauenlye giftes are of the Aereall honny. Others teach the honny in India and Arabia, to be like to salte gathered there on the leaues of trées. Others do doubt whether the honny be a sweat from heauen, or a certaine spittle of the starres, or a iuyce of the aire purging it selfe. But whatsoeuer substance the same is, yet is it a moste swéte, subtill, and healthfull iuyce, as Plinie witnesseth, which at the firste gathering of it, is as a cleare water, but after the boyling a while, and purging of it selfe, as the newe wine (after the pressing forth) is wonte to do, doth by the twenty day after come to a perfect thickenesse of honny, throughe the often repeating

and

and working of it in the hote dayes, frō the beginning of May and vnto the middle of June.

Nowe the honny is gathered in this maner: first, before the honny be prested out of the combes, must those corrupt combes hauing red filth, and hauing yong in them (if any such be there) be prested oute, bicause they bothe procure an euill taste, and with that iuyce corrupt the hony. The combs bruised togither, ought to be put into a cleane prelle, being yet warme, and new gathered out of the Hyues the same day, whiche lette iye there, vntil the hony by little and little be run forth, or rather for the more expedition, prested forthe with a heauy waighte, and the same which is then come forth, is very faire rawe hony. After that the homy with the ware muste be boyled togither, as hereafter shall be taught.

Nowe when the combes be thus bruised togither, and the yong Bées killed and cast forth, then must you make youre hony in this maner. As first in the Moneth of Septēber or October, take ẏ heauier and older hiues, which are of two or thræ yeares olde, and not hauing bred swarmes in the Sommer before: and that ouer smoke and flame of strawe, drie flare, or yellowe Brimstone, the hiue a little whiles be holden, that the Bées may so flie vppe to the toppe of the hiue, or else suche remaining below burne their wings.

After that, turne downe the head of the hiue on the ground, and with a sharpe knife cutte the crolled sticks asunder in the Hiue, or plucke thē forth with your hand. For by that meanes are the combes wel bruised togither, and the Bées either killed with the fall of them, or else flye away. After this putte all the combes on a heape, being gathered oute of the hiues here and there into a prelle, leaning somewhat on the one side, but some put ẏ combs into a wine basket made of smal willow or Osier sticks finely knitte and wrought togither, that hanged vppe in a darke place, the Honny maye runne thorough by little and little from it. After that the honny hathe thus runne forthe into a cleane earthen panne or boll standing vnder it, then the same after poure into an earthen potte, or pottes, be-

ing as yet rawe honny, but clearer and better than the other licour of the hony. Which for certaine daies let stand open, that the swéete licor may throughly cole, and the same in the mean whiles often skimme or purge with a spone. Nowe after this, the fine péeces or crummes of the combes, which yet remaine in the bagge of wicker, or wine basket, or presse, putte into an earthen potte, panne, or kettle, ouer a verye softe fire, that the same may heate without boyling, and alwayes kéepe youre hande in the vessell, to stirre still aboute hither and thither the honny and waxe, and to open also the waxe by péece meale vntill the honny and not the waxe, shall be throughlye molten. When the honny through the heate, beginneth a little to pricke the hande, then poure all the whole Masse or substaunce into a strayner, and putting the same in a presse made for the onelye purpose, wring it harde about, yet it maketh no great matter, if that same be not so earnestly wringed or pressed out, that none of the Honny remaine yet with the Waxe, séeing that the Honny and Waxe haue effects in some causes alike. Now this Honny whiche is thus runne forth, is named the Sodden Honny, whyche oughte in like manner to be poured into earthen pots, and to stande open for certaine dayes, skimming it dayly with a spone, vntill it be throughe colde. The nobler or worthier Honny is that which runneth oute in a manner of the owne accorde, before the second pressing out of the combs. And mixe not of this seconde Honny with the firste, but kéepe them diligentlye aparte, leaste by mixing the firste to the seconde, you make the beste (being the firste) the worser. After all this thus handled, the same whiche yet remaineth in the strainer, wash diligẽtly with Conduit or faire Spring water, that you may so haue the Mulse or hony water, of which being sodden and diligently skimmed (as of this hereafter shall be further taught) is the Mulse made, that serueth to manye good vses.

Which

¶ Which Honny is accompted best. Cap.xxv.

CErtaine Countries doe excell in the perfecte goodnesse of Honny, like as the famous Attica of Græce, which for the excellencie of the Honny is hadde in great reputation throughout the worlde. Hybla also & Hymetus being hilles of the same Countrie, which the deceiuers applie to Honny, that the same maye both be named Hymetus and Hybleus Honny. Creta, Cyprus and Affrica, as in goodnesse they are notable or worthy, so the abundant or maruellous plentie of the Honny is there commended. Also the newnesse of Honny is likewise commended, as the auntientnesse of wines, but the Spring and Sommer Honny, especially if the vessell or hiue stande in a valley or bottome, and doeth excell in the waight of hande. But the honny gathered of bitter hearbes is counted vnprofitable, as the same Honny which the Bées gather in the country of Pontus, where the Bées onely gather their honny of the Wormewoode. The white in all Countries is better estéemed than the blacke, but the beste honny is that whiche is very cleare, of a golden colour, of a moste pleasaunt and swæte taste, cleauyng somewhat to the fingers in the handlyng, and but little stiffening or waxing hard togither. And that the honny in the pouring forth, doth straightway breake here and there, and squirteth or sprinckleth (sodainely as it were) sundrie droppes abroad, which being on thys wise, Plinie teacheth to be the triall and sure note of a good and profitable honny.

¶ Of the venomous Honie, and of the wonderfull Honye of Creta. Cap.xxvj.

IT so much forceth to vnderstande and know, what maner of foode ẏ same is, with the which ẏ Bées do liue, as ẏ poysoned hony also, that may be gathered by them, whether it be euill or venomous. For the Honny of Heraclea in the Coun-

trey of Pontus, hath bin for certaine yeares, very dangerous, especially throughe a certaine hearbe growing white, whiche also vexeth their cattell by eating therof, named of the dwellers there, Aegellothron. But by these notes is that Honnye founde out and tried to be venomous, as firste, that the same is not thicke at all, the colour brighter or more glistering, and hath a strong sauour, mouing forthwith often sneesing, and is also waightier. Also such persons, as taste somewhat thereof, doe couet to lie or fall hastily on the earth, seeking for coldenesse, and be all on a sweate, so that in sodaine daungers, muste some speedy helpes or remedies be ministred, like as the olde Pulse of the best hony, and herb Grace, or other like confections, be often ministred to suche persons. There is also another kind of venomous hony, in the border of the country of Põtus, that for ỹ madnesse which it engendereth, is named of the people Neonomenon: the same hony is supposed to be gathered of the floure Rhododendros, whiche groweth plentie there in the woodes. Plinie writeth of a marueilous honny to be in Creta, for that in Carina being a hill of that Countrey, he affirmeth a honny to be gathered, whiche the flies wil not touch, and supposed also to be a singular Honny, for the composition of euery medicine.

¶ Of the miraculous worthinesse of Honny. Cap. xxvij.

MOst men in Italy prepare and make their medicines whiche they purpose to kepe long, with honny, so that honny preserueth euery thing from putrifying, which you would haue in safety, and to continue for a seasõ, through his clammines se. And of this, auntient men did embalme bodyes of the deade, which they would haue preserued, and to continue sound without corrupting many yeres, with hony only, and the same they also smeared within the tombes or sepulchres of the deade, for the longer képing of bodyes. The selfe same writeth the learned Papinius of ỹ body of Alexander, which was likewise embaul-

embaulmed with Hony. And not vnlike to this writeth Plinie, in the xrij. booke, and xriij. Chapter of his Histories, of sundrye dead bodyes also embaulmed w̄ hony. Which in another place also of his Histories writeth by Claudius Cæsar, that brought a monster out of Egipt into his countrey, whiche was also embaulmed with Honny. Ahanæus also writeth, that bodies subiect to sickenesses, maye both be kept frē from sicknesses, and from corrupting a long time, through the often smearing and annoynting of Honny ouer all the bodie. As the like writers report, that the Isle of Corsica, or Corse do, whiche liue a long time.

The Macrobians being a people in Affricke, named also Mœrein, doe liue a long time, as certaine authours write, bycause with the meate of Honny, whyche is plentie with them, they dayly be fed, and vse continually. Some affirme that Democritus which recreated by Honny, with the only breath and sauour of the Honnye made hote, liued (as they write) vnto a hundred nine yeares. Aristoxenus writeth, that the table of Pythagoras was dayly furnished with only breade and honny, and yet liued vnto ẏ fourescore and ten yeres of the Philosopher Heraclides. The Honnye also is founde to auayle against surfettes, and of this accompted amongst the medicines putting awaye drunkennesse. And of this it is no maruel, that suche throughlye skilfull in Phisicke, when anye be ouercloyed or filled with Wine, do counsell firste to emptie their stomackes by vomityng, and after against the force of the fume euaporating of the remnaunt of the Wine yet remaynyng, they giue to them Honny spreade on breade, as it were by putting backe the euill, that it maye so remedie and putte awaye the grosse fume.

¶ How profitable the vse of Honny is in medicines. Cap. xxviij.

FIrste the white Honye is to be vsed in cooling Medicines, but the yealowe in heating medicines: also the nature and

propertie of honny, is to cleanse and open, and to expel humors. Therefore it is profitably applyed in filthy vlcers, being boyled and annoynted vpon. It closeth also lose and gaping flesh. through his wholenesse. Also with Liquid Alume & honny sodden togither, are Ringwormes, and cornes or swelling of the fæte healed, by annoynting therewith. Against the vncertaine soundings and noyse of the eares, and grieuous pains of them, the hony grounded with that salte digged out of the earth, and dropped warme into the eares: the selfe same killeth both nits and lyce, by only annointing the heade therwith. Also the hony purgeth the eyes dimme of sight, healeth the swellings, and other defaultes and griefes of the iawes, the swellings and kernels vnder the iawes, neare to the throte, after the preparing to vse, the same be gargelled in the throate, and the mouth washed therewith. The honie eaten causeth vrine, helpeth ỹ cough (being cleane skimmed before) and the byte of a Snake or Adder. The hony also helpeth those which haue drunke vnwares the iuyce of blacke Poppie, so that against the same euill and daunger they drinke rosed honny warme. Also the same drunke helpeth the malice and daunger of Mushromes eaten, and the byte of a madde dogge, or otherwise melting in the mouth, after the forme of an Eclegma. Yet all the sortes of rawe Honny be windie and swell the bodie, mouing a rumbling or noyse in the belly, procuring ỹ cough, easily cõuerted into euil humors, stopping the liuer and the milt through the clammines, and hurtfull to chollericke bodies, if so be the honny before (as Dioscorides writeth) be not throughly skimmed and cleansed as the same ought to be. The honny also boyled doth better nourishe than the rawe, yet lesse mouing the belly to solublenesse, and to the stole. And the honny of it selfe, or mixed with others, helpeth the sore in the lungs, and all other diseases of the lungs. The honny is rightly ministred to such as haue the impostume in the lungs and the pluresie. And the hony in which dead Bées are, is applyed to the venemous honny. The hony drunke with wine helpeth the corruptiõs which are engendred of the meate fishes. But to colde and moyste bodies the honny is more profitable

fitable, therfore verie fitte for olde persons, as Galen affirmeth. And to persons being twentie yeares of age, and of an vntemperate hotenesse, or others hote of qualitie, the honny to them is hurtefull, bycause it is sone conuerted into choller in them. Democritus was on a time asked, by what meanes men might both continue in perfite health, and liue vnto very old yeares, to which he thus answered: if so be men annoint their bodies outwarde with Oyle, and apply their bodies inwarde with honny. Further honny profiteth weake persons, being applyed as the Mulse water, of which shal after be taught in the next chapter. To persons cold of nature, the honie may aptly be ministred in hote broth, but to hote persons ministred in warme brothe, the honie is not rightly giuen. The honny mixed with Camphora, & lying to settle three dayes before, with the which annointing the face, doth spedily clense the spots in the face: the self same doth the honie, mixed with the gall of an Ore. The pure white honie clenseth the breast, softneth Impostumes, being as well without, as within the bodie. The hony also mundifyeth, openeth the stoppings of the Liuer and Mylte, helpeth dropsie bodies, and strengtheneth weake members . The Aromaticke honny much auayleth in sundrie diseases, being thus prepared, as the pure redde Rose leaues finely clipped, and after boyled in pure white honnie, being often and diligentlye skymmed. For such a Honnye doeth comforte and mundifye, dissolueth in the clensing the clammy swellings, digesteth the fleumaticke and grosse humors, and drunke also with colde water, it bindeth the bellie, but ministred with warm water it loseth the bellie.

Of

¶ Of the drinke of Honny which they cal the Mulse water, or ſweete water of the Romaines. Cap xxix.

By the aunſwere of Pollio the Romaine vnto Auguſtus Emperour, we may euidently learn, that the Mulſe made of hony, is healthfull drinke in ſtrengthning the bodie. For Auguſtus on a time demaunded of him by what meanes a man might liue to great yeares, and all that ſeaſon frée from ſickenelles, to whome he thus aunſwered, that applying the Mulſe water within, and annoynting Oyle without the bodye, doeth worke the like. The Mulſe truly is a drinke made of water and hony mixed togither, which ỹ Grécks properly name Melicrate, & ſome Hydromel, as the drinke made with wine vnlayde, or without water, and hony, they aptly name Oenomel. Now the Mulſe water drunke, doeth eaſe the paſſage of winde or breath, ſoftneth the belly, and the long time of oldeneſſe changeth it into the kinde of Wine, moſte agréeable and profyting the Stomacke: but the ſame contrary to the Synowes, yet it recouereth the appetite loſt, and is a defence against the dangerous drinke of Henbane, if it be miniſtred with Alles milke. Thys drinke truely (Aegineta wryting therof) is thus made: let eight times ſo muche water be mixed vnto your Honnye prepared, whyche boyle or ſæth ſo long, vntill no more ſome aryſeth to be ſkymmed off, then taking it from the fyre, preſerue it to youre vſe. But the ſame Paule Aegineta affyrmeth, that the Mulſe profyteth nothing in manner the collericke, bycauſe the ſame in them is lightly conuerted into choller.

¶ Of the drinke Oenomel, which is made of pure wyne and Hony. Cap. xxx.

The Oenomel, which is a ſwéete wine made with Honny, Aegineta teacheth the ſame, not only for the preſeruation of helth, but alſo to expel the tormẽt of ſicknelles, through this moſt

moſt wholeſome drinke, as ỳ whiche giueth, not onely ſtrength of body and courage, but the long race of yeares. Alſo it expelleth an olde griefe of the Reines, being often drunke with Parcely ſeedes. But the beſte Oenomell is that which is made of olde and tarte wine, and the beſte purified hony, for the ſame doth leſſe ſwell. The ſame alſo harmeth drunke after meales, but before taken, doeth procure an appetite. Dioſcorides teacheth that maner of making the Oenomell in this order: firſt he willeth to take one gallon and a quarte of Wine, and mixing it with halfe a gallon, and a pinte of the beſte hony, to prepare the ſame orderly. But ſome prepare or make the drinke ſpedilier to vſe after this manner, as the hony they boyle with Wine, and after poure forth the ſame into other veſſelles.

¶ Of the ſingular water of Hony gotten by order of diſtillation. Cap xxxj.

The Hony of Bées méete to diſtillation, ought eſpecially to be white of coloure, which before the diſtilling muſte bee mixed with pure and white and well waſhed ſande, but not drie in any caſe, after that, putte the ſame either into a common Roſe Limbecke of Tinne, ſetting a hearie ſiue cloſe vppon it, that it may touch the Hony in the diſtilling, or elſe into a body of Glaſſe, ſette into a potte of fine ſifted aſhes or ſande, making at the firſte a ſofte fire vnder it, vntill the firſt water bée come, whiche is white, and after the yelow water appeareth, then put vnder another receiuer, letting aſide the white, and ſo long diſtill vntill the redde beginneth to ſhewe: at the appearaunce of whiche, put vnder another receiuer, letting that remaine vntill no more will come. Which red water being the laſt, ſerueth for ſundrie vſes, as to die womens haire yellow, by oftẽ wetting the haire with a Spunge, and drying the ſame in the hote Sunne. Alſo it cauſeth fayre and long haire, and ſtayeth the ſheading of haire: beſides (this thirde water) doeth cleanſe the foule corruption and matter being in filthye woundes, and olde vlcers, if they be waſhed twice a daye

with the ſame.cauſing alſo newe fleſh to grow in thoſe places, if you dayly waſhe them with the ſayd water, or otherwiſe dip linnen clouts in it, laying them aptly on the ſores. The ſelfe-ſame healeth places grieuouſly burned, without appearaunce of anye ſcarre afterwarde, by often applying lynnen cloutes dropped in it. And the ſeconde water being of a golden coloure dipped into the eyes, doeth not onely helpe ſwollen and bleared eyes, but the pinne and webbe in them, by the dayly and often dropping of the ſame into the eyes. But as touching the white and firſte water, there is no worthy matter mentioned in thys place by any of the old Practiſers.

¶ Another manner of diſtilling the Honie, more at large, taught. Cap.xxxij.

TAke a pinte, or as much as you wil, of ỹ pure roſed hony, which put it into a bodie of glaſſe cloſe couered & luted about, ſetting the ſame after into hote horſe dung with a ſquare ſtone on the head, & couering it ouer with ỹ horſe dung for 14. dayes, after which time, take the body forth, ſetting it into a fornace of fine ſifted aſhes, well a finger bredth or more aboue ỹ hony, preſuppoſing on your part, ỹ little peces of flint ſtones be put into ỹ hony, & then diſtilled with a ſoft fire into a receiuer well luted at the mouth, for doubt of the ayre breathing forth. Whē ỹ ſame beginneth to diſtil, then draw forth part of the fire (vnleſſe you can otherwiſe gouerne your fire by the help of the fornace) whiche comming forthe white, let ſo long diſtill, vntill there appeare yealow droppes like to gold. Vpon the ſight of this, ſet vnder another receyuer, keeping diligently this firſte water by it ſelfe, and increaſing the fire, let that long diſtil, vntill certain white ſmoakes appeare, running into the receiuer: that ſpedily take away, putting to another receiuer, which let ſo long diſtill, vntil no more will droppe forth, and this laſte, is of a ruble colour in redneſſe, ſo that if a woman often wetteth the heares of hyr head with this thirde water, ſetting then in ỹ hote Sunne, both to drie and wette them againe, wearing in ỹ meane whiles a large ſtrawne hatte with an open crowne, to

ſpreade

ſpreade the heares vpon, for the ſpédier drying of them, whiche ſo ordering, doeth not onely cauſe the heares to growe long and very fayre, but dyeth them in time ſo yealowe as gold. Alſo to diuerſe other vſes, doth this red water ſerue, as afore is taught in the other Chapter. The white water (which commeth firſte) by waſhing the face orderlye with it, doeth cauſe it to become cleare and fayre, and kéepeth the ſkinne from loking olde, for a long time, as the ſame hath ben erperienced often by the worthy dames of Rome, Naples, and Venice. And the yealow lyke golde being the ſecond water, doth eſpecially ſerue to this vſe, that if any perſon happeneth to be infected with the plague or Peſtilence, then to take two ounces of this yealow water of Aloes Epaticke, of redde Myrre, and of the eaſt ſaffron, of each ten graines, and a leafe of the beſt golde, all which grinde into fine pouder, mixing the ſame with this water: after that giue it vnto the ſicke to drinke, whiche no doubt wil both helpe this & many other diſeaſes.

¶ The manner of diſtilling a water of Hony named the Quinteſſence. Cap xxxiij.

TO make this ſingular and precious water, you muſt take two pounde of the pureſt white honie, being both cleare and pleaſaunt in taſte, whiche put into a body of glaſſe, being ſo bigge, that foure of the fiue partes of it maye remayne emptie, the ſame lute ſtronglye aboute, ſetting the heade after on it, and a receyuer aptelye to the noſe of the Still.

When you haue thus done, then make a gentle fyre at the firſte vnder it, but after increaſe the fire or heate more and more, vntill certaine white ſmoakes appeare in the head of the glaſſe bodye, whiche do you workemanlye cóle and turne into water, by the wettyng of lynnen clothes in colde water, and layed on the heade and noſe, towarde the receiuer, for that turneth into a water ſo red as bloud: and

being all come, putte it into another glaſſe, ſtopping the mouth cloſe, whiche let ſtande ſo long, vntil the water become verye cleare, and in coloure to the Rubie.

Now being on this wiſe, diſtill the ſame againe in Balneo Mariæ, and ſo often repeate this, vntill you haue diſtilled it fiue or ſeauen times ouer, that the coloure be chaunged, and in the ende, to the coloure of golde. Whiche then is moſte pleaſaunt of ſauoure, and ſo ſwæte, that nothing maye be compared like to it, in flagrantneſſe of ſmell. The Quintеſſence doeth diſſolue golde, prepareth it apte to be drunke, and any Jewell put into the water, it doth alſo diſſolue the ſame. Alſo this is named the Bleſſed Water, in that giuing to any two or thræ drams to drinke, being at the point of death, doth ſo ſodainely recouer the perſon againe, as doeth the Quintеſſence of wine. And waſhing any grieuous wounde or ſtripe with the water, doeth in ſhorte time heale the ſame. Alſo this pretious water doth marueilouſly help the cough, the Rheume, the diſeaſe of the Splen, and many other diſeaſes, whiche woulde ſcarcely be beleeued. The water alſo miniſtred daily vnto a perſon ſicke of the Palſey, for the ſpace of. xlvj. daies, he was by the mightie helpe of God, & this miraculous water, throughly healed of the diſeaſe. Alſo this Quintеſſence doth helpe the falling ſickneſſe, and preſerueth the bodye from putrifying, ſo that by al thoſe we maye learne, that thys is rather a diuine water from Heauen (and ſente from God) to ſerue vnto all ages.

¶ The manner of drawing and making Waxe of the Honny combes. Cap. xxxiiij.

THe Honny being drawen from the combes, although ſome Bées hang on them deade, yet putte all togither into a fayre panne or caulдron, into whiche poure ſo muche water or more, as the quantitie of the combes be. This ſet ouer a ſofte fire, vntill the ſame what it be, is throughly heated and molten in the panne, and in the melting continually ſturre the ſame aboute, with a bigge ſplatter or ſome ſtaffe, leaſte the Ware

cleaue

cleaue to the panne ſides, throughe the flame or heate of fire, and appeare burned: after poure the whole ſubſtaunce into a courſe hairen bagge, preſſing it forth into a troughe or other like veſſell, made for the only purpoſe, on which poure two or three kettles full of hote water, that no dregs hang after on the Wax, and by that means ſhall you haue the Wax both pure and cleane. But if you wil haue it caſte into faire round cakes, and to be cleaner and purer, then melte the Wax againe, and being molten, poure it into a cleane veſſell, which waſhed likewiſe with warme water (as aboue was taught) ſet after in the Sunne, by which meanes, the cake will continue verye long faire of coloure.

¶ What Waxe is beſte allowed and commended. Cap. xxxv.

WAxe being the fode of lighte, and ſeruing vnto innumerable vſes of men, of all the kindes, the ſame is beſte allowed and commended, whiche is bothe newe made, meanelye redde of coloure, ſomewhat fattie, ſmelling ſweete, hauyng ſome ſauoure in it of the Honny, and cleare. Of the Wax alſo in ſundrie Countries, that in the countrie of Pontus is well commended, and the ſame in the Ile of Creta: nexte to theſe is the Wax in the Ile of Corſica, which is made of the Bore tree, and ſuppoſed to haue ſome good effectes in it for Medicine.

¶ Of the great commoditie and benefite of Waxe in Medicines. Cap. xxxvj.

WAxe hath a meane among heating things, both in the cowling, drying, and moiſtning, as writeth Galen in the ſeauenth booke of Simples, and. 22. Chapiter, whiche properly helpeth the roughneſſe of the breaſte, when it is ſoyned or mired with the oyle of Violets, for that bothe mollifyeth or ſoftneth the ſinewes, ripeneth and reſolueth vlcers. The quantitie of a

peaſe in ware ſwallowed downe of Nurſes, or ſuch women as giue ſucke, doth diſſolue the milke courded in the pappes. And tenne little peeces of pure newe ware, vnto the biggeneſſe of a hempſeede, drunke downe at one time, doeth cauſe the milke not to courde in the womans ſtomacke and breaſtes. If the priuie place or thereabout, of either man or woman, happeneth to ſwell, then by applying an ointment made of white ware, it ſhortly aſſuageth and healeth the ſame. If anye alſo happeneth to be diſeaſed with the bloudy flixe, by ſtuffing a yong Pigeon with newe ware, after roſting the ſame, and eating the fleſhe thereof, doeth in ſhorte time after ſtaye the ſame. Alſo, if a Quince made hollowe and filled with pure newe ware, be after roſted vnder hote embers, vntill the ſame be tender, and eaten faſting without drinking after it, doth in like ſorte ſtaye and helpe the perillous flixe, and ſcouring of bloude. The ware beſides ſerueth to all maner of plaiſters, ointments, ſuppoſiteries, and ſuch like.

¶ Of that whych is a ſtay of the combes, and made for a defence of Bees from colde. Cap. xxxvij.

The ſame made of Bées at the entrie of the mouth of hiues, oughte to be yelowe of coloure, and ſweete ſmelling, like to Storax, and drawne into a length, like to Maſtike. Yet that is rather choſen, becauſe in heating and drawing it is principalleſt. For of itſelfe, this draweth forth thornes or ſplents of wood run deepe into the fleſh by applying it plaiſterwiſe on the griefe, it helpeth an olde coughe by making a ſmoake thereof, and holding the mouth ouer it, and applyed in the forme of an ointment on ringwormes, doeth ſpedily heale them. Nowe this matter (as aboue was taught) is the ſtay of the hony combes, by whiche Bées ſtoppe and kéepe forth al manner of colde and other annoyances which might endamage them, the ſame alſo being of ſo ſtrong a ſauor, that ſome vſe it in the ſtéede of Galbanum. M. Varro nameth it a refuge of Bées, without their cottages, becauſe Bées make the ſame at the entry of the hiue.

¶ Howe

¶ Howe to make Waxe white. Cap. xxxviij.

WAxe is made white in this manner, firſte that kinde of ware (fit for this purpoſe) ought to be whiter and purer, and broken into little peces, putte after into a newe earthen panne, pouring vppon it ſufficient ſalt or ſea water, and a lyttle Nitre brayſed, which ſeeth altogither. When the ſame hath boiled twice or thrice vp, remoue the panne from the fire: the ware being throughly colde, take forth of the panne, and ſcraping off the filth, if any ſuche hang on, putte againe into newe ſalte water, ſeething it againe. And when the ware hathe ſo often boyled (as aboue was taughte) then take off the panne from the fire, and taking the bottome of a newe earthen panne, melt it with colde water, whiche dippe by little and little into the ware, drowning it a little, and that the water be aboue the ware, whereby the ware maye become verye thinne, and be the ſoner coledit ſelfe. And taking by and by oute the moulde or bottome, drawe firſte the rounde cake off, and wetting againe the bottome in colde water, dip it into the ware, and the ſame ſo long doe, vntill you haue drawne off all that ware into cakes of like ſorte, whiche after ſtitche throughe with threede, hanging the cakes on a rope one from another, and that in the daye time often wetting them in the Sunne, but in the nighte time, in the Mone light: and ſo long doe this, vntill the ware be white. And if anye deſireth to haue ware whiter than this, then let him do the like, as aboueſaide, but boyle the ware oftner. Some in ſtede of the ſalte ſeawater, take ſtrong Wine water, in whiche they boyle the ware in the ſame manner twice or thrice, as aboue was taughte. And Paulus Euerdus in his booke of Confections, teacheth the making of ware white two manner of wayes.

Howe

¶ Howe you may make redde Waxe. Cap.xxxix.

That you maye colour and make Waxe redde, take to one pounde of waxe, three ounces of verye cleare Turpentine, if it be in ſommer, but if it be in winter, then take foure ounces. Now theſe diſolue and melt togither ouer a ſoft fire, and taking it from the fire, let it cole a little, after which put in your Vermillian finely ground on a Marble ſtone, and of ſweete Salet Oyle, of eache one ounce, mixing theſe well, ſtirre al togither, diligently. But ſome in ſtede of Vermilion, doe take the reede leade, which is little commended, except there be three times ſo muche of the redde leade, as of the Vermilion putte in. And in the like ſorte may you make the greene Waxe, if inſtede of the Vermillian, you take ſo much of the greene Coporas finely ground, as you did of the Vermilian.

¶ Howe to drawe a profitable Oyle out of Waxe, for ſundrie vſes. Cap.xl.

The Oile of Waxe, is myraculous and diuine in worke, bycauſe it ſerueth in a manner vnto all griefes. Reymond Lully greatly commendeth this Oyle, approuing it rather as a celeſtiall and diuine remedie, and that this in woundes, doeth worke moſte miraculouſly, which for his maruellous commoditie, not ſo well to be allowed of the common Chirurgions, bycauſe this pretious Oyle healeth a woonde, be the ſame neuer ſo wide and bigge, being before wide ſtitched vppe, in the ſpace of tenne or twelue daies at the moſte. But thoſe whiche are ſmall, this Oyle healeth in three daies, by annoynting onely on the cuttes or woundes, and laying after linnen cloutes, wette in the ſaide Oyle, vpon the woundes. For inward diſeaſes the ſaide Oyle worketh myraculouſlye (if that you miniſter or giue a dramme at a time in white Wine to drinke) and ſtayeth alſo the ſheading of haire, either on the head or beard, by

by annointing the places with this Oyle. Besides these, it is miraculous in the procuring of vrine, being mightily stopped, and helpeth also stitches and paine in the loynes, by drinking the like quantitie of the Oyle aboue taughte in white wine.

Now the making and drawing of this oyle, is on this wise: firste take a body of glasse, named a Retort, which stronglye lute aboute with clay and flocks, diligently tempered togither with salte water: after the body is thus fenced and thoroughe drie, putte in a pounde or more of pure newe ware, so that the saide ware filleth not aboue halfe youre body, and to euerye pounde of Ware, poure in foure ounces, of the pouder of redde bricke, finely brused, whiche after set into an earthen potte, filling it rounde aboute with fine sifted ashes or sande. After this, set the potte with the bodye in it, on a fornace, making a softe fire at the firste vnder it, and after encreasing a little more your fire, distil them so long, vntill all youre Oyle be come, whiche after a while wyll congeale in the receiuer: but it maketh no greate matter, although the oyle so doe, for it is neuertheless in his perfection. Bycause that if you shoulde distill it so often ouer, vntill it will congeale or stiffen no more in the receiuer, then shall you make it ouer hotte, and so quicke in the mouth, that it is not possible by anye meanes to drinke it downe. But being once distilled, you maye either giue it in Wine to drinke, or annoint with the Oyle on any place of the bodye where you will, whiche will alwayes doe good, and hurte in no manner.

And in consideration of these aboue taught, you maye euidently learne and perceiue, that this myraculous Oyle oughte to be hadde in greate veneration of the common sorte.

¶ Another waye of drawing the Oyle of Waxe moste noble, and doth maruelously help the cold Goute, the Sciaticke, the swelling of the legs, and al other griefes proceeding of a colde cause. Cap. xlj.

TAke of pure newe ware so muche as you please, which put into a pame ouer the fire to melte, and being molten, haue by you in a readinesse another panne well glased, and cleane within, filled with verie good and perfecte wine, into whiche poure youre molten ware, letting it soake and drinke in well, and washe often in the saide wine. After this take the ware forth, melting it againe ouer the fire, and molten, washe the same againe in the beste wine, so that euerie time melting the ware, poure it into freshe new wine, washing and soaking it in the same diligently, after wringing it very wel with the hands. And vsed on this wise, both melt and washe againe in the aboue saide manner, and this also do for eighte times togither. Then set the same forth, being a cleare season and ayre, all the nighte throughe, after which put the ware into a Retorte with a little of Mumia, and oyle of Ypericon or Saint Johns wort, and a little olde Oyle: and although without these it maye doe good, yet mixed with these it worketh farre better, than vsed alone.

Nowe to retourne to the former matter, this crooked bodye or Retorte set in fine sifted ashes, and a gentle fire made vnder it, vntill all the oyle do runne forth, and in this comming forth of the oile, shall appeare all the foure Elements, as Ayre, Water, Earth and Fyre, whiche will orderly appeare in the receiuer, right marueilous to see. And the Oyle being thus fullye drawne, worketh miraculouslye in all diseases which proceed of a colde cause, like as we haue aboue taught.

The

¶ The concluſion to the Reader.

THus (gentle Reader) I haue (I truſt) efullye ſatiſfied thy deſire in as manye thinges as are needefull to be knowen. And I committe this my little Booke to thy gentle iudgement: if thou mayſte receiue any profite or commoditie thereby, I ſhal be gladde of it, and if not, yet fauourably let it paſſe from thee to others, whoſe knowledge and experience is leſſe than thine herein, that they may gather ſuche things as to them are ſtrange, thoughe to thee wel known before. And thus briefflye I committe thee to God.

(·.·)

¶ Certaine Husbandly Coniectures of Dearth and Plentie for euer.

The first Chapter.

AND first consider and marke, that howe the weather is a daye before the day present, and the daye after the Sunnes entraunce into the signe Aries, and suche like shall the weather be (for the moste parte) in these three moneths, as in September, October, and Nouember.

And loke howe the weather shal be at the Sunnes entrance into the signe of Leo, as at the day of the entrance the daye before, and the daye after, and suche commonlye shall be in the moneths of December, Januarie, and Februarie, for if the winde shall then blowe oute of the North, or Easte, and those daies drie, then shall followe a verye colde season in those three moneths: but if the winde blowe out of the South or Weast, and that it raineth in those three dayes, then yse to followe in those three moneths. And if the weather in these three daies shal be neither wholy drie, nor wholy moiste, then shall folowe an vnstedfaste Winter.

And like as the weather shall be at the Sunnes entraunce into the signe Libra, as at the daye of the entraunce, the daye before, and the daye after, suche for the more parte shall be the Spring, as in the moneth of Marche, Aprill, and May.

And loke howe the weather shal be at the Sunnes entrance into the signe Aquarius, at the daye of the entraunce, the daye before, and the daye after, (suche for the more parte) shall the weather be in the moneths of June, July, and August.

And manye auntient men affyrme, that like as the weather shall be whiles the Sunne is running by the signe Libra, and vnto the .20. degree of Scorpio, which time is frō the daye named (the Exaltation of the crosse) vnto the day of al Saints, such for the more parte shall the yeare following be, as in dividing that foresaide time into twelue moneths, and that foure

dayes

daies doe aunswere to eche moneth, of the whiche foure dayes, that eache one of the foure, doeth declare the condition of the quarter following, and beginning also to recken November as the first moneth of the yeare.

And the generall signes of dearth and plentie after ỹ minds of the auncient husband men be these, as the ouermuch coldenesse drying, the ouermuch moysture softning, the ouermuche heate greatly burning, and the ouermuch drinesse putrifying and working into dust.

For when any of these qualities shall exceede in the proper time, but especially in that time, which to the corne and fruites do not agree, then shall dearth and scarcitie both of fruietes and corne ensue.

As for example, when the moneth of March shalbe ouer moyst and wet, which rather ought to be drie, and that the moneth of April shal be drie, which then ought to be moyst, doth after pronounce the penurie of the fruites of the earth.

And if that part also of sommer shalbe weat, in which the corne doth then fall vnto ripenesse, that rather ought to be drie, doth after signifie the scarcitie both of corne and other fruites of the earth.

And the like may be saide of the other constitutions, which when the Elementall qualities shal be in such a conditionas do best agree, then doe they promise both fruitfulnesse and plentifulnesse.

And if in the Spring be signes of colde and drought, and that in the ende of the spring neare the full moone be frostes, then shall follow very small yeelde of the fruites of the earth, and little wine that yere following.

And if the spring be drie, then fewe shall the fruites of the trees be, yet good, and the scarcitie of corne shal be that yeare.

And if the Spring shall be colde, the fruites of the Earthe shall be late ripe.

And if the Spring and Sommer shall be ouer wette, or misty, or colde, with cloudie weather for manye daies togither, whiles all the trees haue borne their blossoms, and the fieldes

their flowres, and beginne to shed their flowre, then shal follow the scarcitie of fruites of the earth in that yeare, or elle a verie greate rot of them, and many sicknesses in that yeare.

And if the sommer be drier than customably, then shal follow the scarcitie of corne, yet the Sommer fruites shall that yeare be found, the fishes then die, and most sharpe sicknesses shall raine that yeare.

And if the Sommer shal be hotter than customably, then shal followe many sicknesses or diseases, yet great plentie of the Sommer fruites that yeare.

And if the Sommer shal be colder than customably, then shal follow a healthfull yere, but the fruites of the earth shal late ripe that yeare.

And here further note of the spring, that if in the same season of the spring, there shal be a more plentie of all flowres and fruits toward than customably, doth afterwe signifie a scarcitie of corne that yere, unlesse the heate of sommer doth otherwise reforme the same.

And the wise and auncient husbandmen haue obserued, that when the winter shal send downe store of raine on the earth, so that the same exceede not or bee too much, and that the March following be drie, and the Aprill wette by often shoures, and that the same part also of Sommer bee drie in which the corne falleth to ripenesse, then doth the same promise a plentifull yeare.

And when that part of the Harueſt shal be faire and drie, in which the wheat is sowen, and the parte of sommer in which corne falleth to ripenesse shal be faire and drie, the spring also meanely warme, doth then not only promise fruitefulnesse, but a plentifull yeare of corne.

And nowe the Harueſt moyster than customably doth putrifie the Grapes, and yeeldeth a small yelde of wines that yeare, with the scarcitie of other fruites.

And if in the latter part of Harueſt it be moyster, than in the yere following shal ensue the scarcitie of corne.

And if the Harueſt bee drier in the first part, then in the

yeare

yeare following shal lie, and that small graine named Spelt and such like, be deare.

And if the harueſt be hoter than customably, then shall follow a diſeased yeare and that daungerus.

And if the Haruest be colder than customably, then shall follow the losse of the Haruest fruites both in the stoze and tast of them.

And the Winter colde and drie, is of all husvandmen commended, but extréme colde, doeth then sea the trées, especially those which ioy in a warme aire, as the Pomegranade trée, the Olive trée, the Lemmon tree, the Figge trée, the Peach trée, and such like.

And if the Winter exréde in the extremitie of coldnesse, this doth it signifie harme both vnto the Vine and Olive trée, the Cherie trée, and the yellow Quince trée.

And if the Winter be hote and moyst, then the same doth pronounce an vnhealthfull yeare, and daunger to seedes and fruites of the earth.

And the excesse qualitie, and distemporature of any of the foure quarters, is euill and daungerous to the fruites of the earth.

And the plentie of snowe falling in the due season of the yeare, doth batten the earth, (and if the others do helpe) then doth it signifie the plentie of corne and other fruites of the earth.

And if any washeth the handes with snowe, it doth then make them stedie, in that the snowe is ingendered of a vapour somewhat drie and earthly.

And the snowe nourisheth shéepe & other beasts in that the snow is ingendered of the moyst aire, in which life consisteth.

And the snowe increaseth the corne and other growing things on earth, in that by his coldnesse it so doth shut ỳ poures of the earth, that the heate with the whiche the séedes of the earth be cherished, cannot then breath forth.

And the snow heateth and cherisheth the earth, by the thicke couering of it, and defendeth the gréene wheat and

other

other ſædes ſowen, from the ſharpe and vehement colde then of the ayre.

And the ſnowe may be kept all the yeare vnder the earth, couered with ſtrawe, and profitable it is to mixe with the wine in hote ſommer, and neceſſarie alſo to cole the ayre about ſick perſons.

And the vnprofitable falling of the deawe, miſtes, or fogges (eſpecially when all creſcent thinges doe bud forth, and ſhewe their floure) as in the Moneth of Aprill and May, as well on the trees, corne and graſſe, which beaſtes then feding on be greatly harmed, through the deaw fallen, and all other thinges alſo much harmed by the ſame, as hath bene often obſerued by the ancient and wiſe husbandmen.

And the ouermuch falling of raine, froſtes or haile, eſpecially in the ſpring time, and in the winter time, whilſt the corne is yet as graſſe, the exceſſe of raine alſo doth then threaten the ſcarcitie of victailes to enſue that yeare.

And the great plentie of beanes, after the opinion of the common husbandmen, through the much raine fallen, doth fore ſhewe the ſcarcitie of corne, and eſpecially of wheate that yeare.

And a like iudgement may be giuen of the Oke and Holy tree, which if they beare plentifully, then a fruitfull yeare followeth, and contrariwiſe bearing but few, then a deare yeare of corne to enſue.

And the great plentie of Graſhoppers, wormes and Caterpillers appearing in their proper time more than cuſtomably, doe not only declare harme to vines and ſædes ſowen, but to all fruites that yeare.

And the great ſtore of windes, not only cauſe little fruites, but ſcarcitie of corne to enſue that yeare.

And a ſtilneſſe in a manner throughout the yeare, doth declare a likelyhode of the plague to enſue ſhortly after.

And the auncient Hipocrates writeth, that when in the Sommer the North winde long continueth, and in the Harueſt, the South winde with more then of raine, it doeth after threa-

ten

in the Winter the headache, hoarsenesse of voice, the cough, consumptions or impostumes to ensue.

And if after a drie Sommer (as write the auntient Phisitions) the North winde doeth long continue in the Harueste, then the bodies of women, and suche diseased with a moiste sicknesse, doe then in that season the rather recouer health, in that the drinesse of the seasons and windes is contrarie to the excesse, and to the rottennesse of the humors, by whiche the sicknesses were caused.

And if the Winter shall be hote and moiste, and the Spring colde and drie, then doth the same threaten sicknesse to men in the Sommer, and that women with childe shall haue vntimely birthes of a light occasion.

And Hypocrates writeth, that when in the Winter be longer Northerly windes, and in the Spring longer Southerly windes, and that rayne and wette in the Sommer following, then doeth followe Agues, and the diseases of the eies.

And when after a colde Winter, and that South winds and rayne in the Spring, and that the Sommer be drie, then in the Haruest following doe agues ensue, paines also of the bowels thorough the greate scouring of the bodie, and sicknesses, with the whiche olde men, diseased persons, and childrē be then more pained.

And when the Southwest winde doth long blowe aboute the end of Haruest, thē those persons diseased with a long sicknesse, do shortly after die.

And a further knowlege of dearth and plentie of victualles, and of sickenesse may be had on this wise.

First in the end of Haruest, cutte open two or three Oke apples, loking whether there be in thē either Flyes, Worms, or Spiders.

For if in the Oke apple be founde Wormes, or Magots, then they signifie (after the opinion of auncient husbandmen) dothe dearth and scarcitie in that yeare.

And if the Oke apple cut open be founde like to flies, it doth after threaten battel to ensue in that yeare.

And if in the Oke apple be founde like to Spiders, then doe they foreshewe the plague or pestilence to ensue in that yeare.

And to conclude, the onely proofe of the former taught, shal moue the Reader better to credite these.

¶ *An euerlasting Prognostication of the* state and condition of euerye yeare, by the only Kalends of Ianuarie: written by that antient learned Leopoldus Austriacus, and others, for the commoditie of the wise Husbandmen. Cap. ij.

AND nowe when the first day of January shal happen on the Sunday, then the Winter shall be temperate and good, yet windie, the Spring wet, the Sommer drie, and the Haruest hurtfull throughe windes. So that victualles shall be reasonable good cheape, plentie of Wines, the good healthe encrease of sheepe and other cattell, and the indifferent plentie of hony, and the like plentie also of Peason, Beanes, Vetches, and the herbes and fruites of the Gardens. Also young men shal die that yeare, and a discorde to be feared betweene Kings, or else some manifest perils to happen to Kings and greate Prelates in authoritie, and that diuers robberies shall be attempted that yeare. And if controuersies happen betweene Princes, then a conclusion of peace to be looked for in that yeare.

And if the firste day of Januarie shall happen on the Monday, then shall the Winter be warme, the Spring very colde, with Snow and Frostes that season, the Sommer boisterous throughe winds, and haile oftentimes, and lande floudes shall be somewhere, and the Haruest very drie. So that sicknesse shall ensue, throughe which many of the simple sorte shal then die, and diuers also shall die, throughe the sodaine plagues then happning.

happening. Also the likelihoode of greate alteration to ensue, & that auntient women to mourne, Kings to die, and a greate slaughter to be feared by the sword. Also small store of wines, the death of Bees, and little hony that yeare.

And if the firste beginning of the moneth of Januarie shal be on Tuisday, then that Winter shal be long, and much snow in that season, and the likelihoode of land floudes, throughe the muche raine then falling, the Spring windie, the Sommer verye wette, and the Haruest abounding in grosse and rotten humors (so that a moste greeuous plague is to be feared, and especially of women, and the likelihoode of many shipwrackes, and very greate cares and troubles to happen vnto Princes, with the scarcitie of fruites of the trees; and corne shall be deare, with the sodaine death of cattel to be feared that yeare. Also wood shal that yeare be deare, and the likelihoode of tearefull fyres, and that the plague to be grieuous that yeare. And yet shal there be store of Peason, Beanes, and Vetches, & plentie of hearbes and floures. Also there shall be plentie of Hony, Oyle, and wines that yeare.

And when the firste of Januarie beginneth on the Wednesday, then shall the Winter be warme and calme, the Spring wette, and disposed to sicknesses, the Sommer hote, and the Haruest vnprofitable, so that long sicknesses are to be feared, & the Quarten Ague with them. Also yong men shall then be sick, and in ieopardie of death, and women the like, & in sundrie places shall happen a famine, with a greate brute of straunge newes. And there is also to be feared the grieuous passions of the hearte, the ydlenesse of minde, or rather distraught, and the diseases of the matrice in women. And yet the plentie of Oyle and Wines, but the scarcitie of corne to be doubted that yeare.

And if the beginning of Januarie be on Thursedaye, then shall the Winter be calme, & temperate, the Spring windie, ye Sommer vnseasonable, and the Haruest drie, so that corne and victualles shall then be deare, yet store of Oile and Wines that yeare. And there is a likelihoode of lighte sickenesses

to happen vnto the common people, but more dangerous sicknesses vnto the richer sorte. And the blearednesse of eies also is to be feared, and that yong children shall then die, battels procured, and the sedition of souldioures, and an earthquake to be doubted that yeare. Also great talke of newes shal be in Kings and Princes houses, and greate perills also be doubted to happen vnto Princes in that yeare.

And if the firste daye of Januarie happen on Fridaye, then shall the Winter be verie cold and drie, the Spring boysterous and wette, the Sommer temperate, the Harueste more wette than drie. So that the blearednesse, and other diseases with the filthinesse of matter running in the eies is to be feared, and the pinne or web is likewise to be doubted to happen in that yeare. And yong children shall ther die, and a likelihode that young women shall be allured vnto a wanton love, throughe the flatterie and great perswasions of men. Also a suspition of battels to ensue in that yeare, and the plague and robberies then to happen. Also the plentie of fruites is then promised, althoughe muche haile fall that yeare.

And if the beginning of Januarie happen on Saterdaye, then the Winter shal be windie and vnstable, the Spring windie, and vnconstant of weather, the sommer vnstable with manye tempestes, and the Harueste drie: So that victualls shall be deare, small store of corne, and little fruite that yeare. Also sheepe shall not well prosper that yeare, and a likelihode then of the death of swine, and that wood shall be deare.

Also there shall be manye tertian agues, and diuers other diseases rayning among men, so that olde men shall then die, and a likelyhode of the death of many men, by the plague. Also many fires shall be hearde of, little store of Wines, Oyle, and Hony, yet plentie of hay that yeare.

And if Newyeares night (being the first night of Januarie) shall be calme and cleare, as withoute winde and raine, then doeth the same promise a prosperous yeare following.

And if in the same night the winde happen to blowe oute of the

the East, then doth the same signifie the death of cattell to ensue that yeare.

And if the same night the winde happen to blowe out of the West, then a likelyhood of the death of Kinges or Princes to ensue that yeare.

And if in the same night the wind happen to blow out of the South, then doth the same signifie the death of manye persons to ensue that yeare.

And if in the same night the winde happen to blow out of the North, then doth the same signifie the small yelde of all fruites of the earth that yeare.

¶ Howe to foreknowe the state of the yeare, by the only rising of the dogge starre, out of the husbandrie of Diophanes. Cap. iii.

AND about the knowledge of this, there is to be considered and noted, in what signe the Mone shall then be, at the first appearance of the dogge starre aboue the Earth in our Realme of England, which generally to be reckened is about the seauenth day of July.

And nowe if the Mone runne then in the signe Aries, at the first appearance of the dog starre, it doth after declare the death of Cattell and much raine. So that small yelde of corne yet plentie of Dyle shal be that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Taurus, at the first appearance of the dog starre, then doth it signifie much raine, fogges and mistes that shal harme much that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Gemini, at the first appearance of the dogge starre, it doth after promise the plentie of corne and wine and all other fruites of the earth, a yet diseased yeare, and to be doubted that a King shal then dye, and that rebellion also shall be moued that yeare.

And if the Mone run thē in the signe Cancer at the first appearance of the dog starre, aboue the earth, it doth after threaten drought, with the great scarcitie of corne to ensue in ỳ yere:

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Leo at the first sight of the dogge starre, it after promiseth the plentie both of wines and Dyle, and the good cheape of corne and other victuals that yeare. And yet to bee feared the commotions of the common people, and slaughter of the same to ensue, with an erthquake, and land floudes to happen in that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Virgo, at the first appearance of the dogge star, it after signifieth the plentie of showers, and the greate store of fruites of the earth, and the cheapenesse also of cattell. And yet to be feared, that women shal be deliuered before their time in that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Libra, at the first appearance of the dogge starre, it after declareth the stirring vp of a king, and a commotion of the common people. And yet the plentie of fruites of the trees, although there be a likelyhood of the scarcitie of corne and oyle in that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Scorpio, at the first appearance of the dogge starre, it after declareth the commotion of priests, the destruction of Bees, and an infective aire to ensue that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Sagitarius, at the first sight of the dogge starre aboue the earth, it after signifieth a rayne yeare, yet fruitefull, and the plentie of corne, and ioy among men. And yet is to be feared the death of cattell, & the multitude of foules in that yeare.

And if the Mone runne then in the signe Capricornus at the first appearance of the dogge star aboue the earth, it after declareth the commotion of souldiours, and greate store of raine, and yet the plentie of corne, wines and Dyle, and al other thinges good cheape in that yeare.

And if the Mone run then in the signe Aquarius, at ỹ first appearance of the dog star aboue the earth, it after signifieth of a most likelyhood, the death of a king or Prince, the scarcitie of corne, and the plentie of such flyes with the long hinder legges, that burne corne by the touching of it. And yet little raine, with the plague to ensue in that yeare.

And

And if the Mone ranne then in the signe Pisces, at the first appearaunce of the dogge starre aboue the earth, it after declareth much raine, and the death of byrdes. And yet doth it promise a sufficient store, & laudable plentifulnesse, both of Wines, Oyle, and corne, but manye persons shall be diseased in that yeare.

¶ Other profitable instructions, right necessarie for husbandmen to know. Cap. iij.

AND first if the horne of the Rammc (nere his eare) be bored, the same doeth tame his fiercenesse. And if his right genitour be trussed vp before he goeth to couer the Ewe, then doeth he beget an Ewe lambe. And if the left be thus straite trussed vp, and the righte hanging downe, then doeth he begette a hee lambe.

And if in the time of the South wind blowing, the Ram doth then couer the Ewe, he doth after beget a shee lambe.

And if when the North wind bloweth the Ram doth then couer the Ewe, doth after beget a hee lambe. And of what colour also the vaines shal be vnder the tongue of the Ewe, suche shal the colour of the skinne of the lambe be, for if she hath black vaines vnder the tong, then the Lambe shall be blacke of skin, and if white vaines vnder the tong then shall she haue a white lambe: and if of diuerse colours, then the lambe shal be of diuerse colours on the skin. And that antient Isaac writeth, that Rams in their yong yeares be of lesser moysture and clammynesse, than be the sucking lambs, and this is, through their age and qualitie then ruling.

And therfore the flesh of yong weathers be better, and ingender better blood than the sucking lambes.

And this is here spoken of such Rammes as be geloed, in that their moysture and hotenesse is then temperate.

And the wethers ouer old are to be refused in eating, in that they be then cold and drie without moysture, and they smallye nourish and hardly digest.

And

Also beefe and other flesshe of beastes being olde, be euill to eate, through the coldenesse and drynesse, and through the lacke of the moysture and hotnesse. And when the olde Rams in their time to couer the Ewe, be sooner moued thereto, than the yong Rammes, it doeth then signifie a good and profitable season to ensue in that yeare, and a good season and prosperous also for sheepe. But if in the proper time to couer the Ewe, the yong Rammes be sooner prouoked thereto than the olde Rams, then doeth followe the greate rotte or murreyne of sheepe in that yeare.

Also Ewes by drinking of water conceiue the sooner with Lambe and of this, the sheepeheardes giue them salte to eate, wherby the more drinking of water, they may so conceiue with yong, and they are also by that meanes preserued the healthfuller. And in the Haruest also some sheapheardes giue them to eate Gourdes seasoned with salt to encrease their milke, for by that meanes doth the milke more plentifully issue forth of their teates, and the Ewes do sooner conceiue. Also in Sommer is the colde Northerly water good for them, and in the Haruest the warme Southerly water good for them.

Also to let sheepe feede in the ende of the day, is greatelye commended: and if they also stirre but little abrode, the same is thought very profitable, in that the muche iourneying, and labouring of them hither and thither, doth so cause the to become leane. Also the skilful sheepeheards knowe, whiche sheepe will well endure the sharp winter, and which not, in that vpon some of the sheepes backes (as they affirme) Ile maye be founde, and vpon othersome none at al. So that by this may be learned, that such sheepe which be weake, a man can hardely pluche off the Ile from their backes. And further learne, that those sheepe whiche haue long tayles, maye hardlier abide the sharpe colde winter, than those hauing broade tayles: and the sheepe also curled of haire (do in like sorte) hardlier endure the bitter winter.

And besides these, the thunder greatly harmeth sheepe, especially if anye Ewe being with yong happeneth to be alone at

that

that instant, for that she then with lambe, doeth of the fearefull noyse of the thunder, deliuer hir yong one before the time. And for a speciall remedie to saue that vntimely casting of Lambes at such times, the skilfull sheepeheardes haue found out, that ye only driuing of many Ewes togither, is a sure safegard to thē to auoyde this occasion. Besides, if you will remoue the rot of sheepe, that they die no more, then take the belly of a Ram, and seeth the same in wine and water togither, which after mixe wt water, and giue the same generallye to all the sheepe to drinke, for by that meanes shall they againe be recouered of their disease. And here learne, that the fleshe of sheepe, and other foure footed beastes, which commonly feede in moyste ground, is euill to feede vpon, for the harde digestion of the same. Also learne, that the good sheepe are knowen by their age, as being neyther to olde, nor yet as Lambes: and by the forme also they are knowen, if so be you finde them large of body.

And they besides haue much and soft wool, and both thicke & long heare, especially on the nape, and about the necke, and the like haire on the belly. And both the health & sicknesse of sheepe may be knowen, if so be any openeth their eyes, and findeth the vaines within to be redde and small, which vndoubtedly declareth them to be sound and good: but if those vaines shal appeare white, or redde, and bigge, then those sheepe are diseased and weake.

And if the sheepe go lustily and boldely by the waye, it is a sure token that they be sound, but sadly and hanging down the heade, then be they diseased. These hitherto of the yearely coniectures, and other rules, only meete for husbandmen to vnderstand and know.

(∴)

¶ A moſt profitable rule for the preſeruation of mans health, throughout the twelue Monethes of the yeare, after the mind of diuers learned men of the Vniuerſitie of Padua.

Chap. v.

Ianuarie.

And firſt in the Moneth of Ianuarie, draine no bloud out of any veyne, vnleſſe a great neceſſitie conſtreyneth thereto, that you can not otherwiſe chuſe. But if you bleede by veyne, beware of taking any cold in this Moneth, ſo nigh as you can, and walke not abroade in the night time. And vſe to eate then the beſt confections, and to drinke often white wine in this Moneth, for that fleume doth then encreaſe. And to faſt long in this Moneth, is hurtfull to the body, but to eate ſalets well prepared with oyle and ſpices, is then commended. And yet waſh not thy head in this moneth, but otherwiſe to bath your body, or to take a vomite you may ſafely do in this Moneth.

Alſo take euery morning once (throughout thys Moneth) for three houres before dinner, a little quantitie of Roſed honnye, for that the ſame doth ſo comfort the ſtomacke, and cleanſe the body both of cholier and fleume. And to drinke alſo theſe ſpices eyther in wine or ale, as Graines, Ginger, Nutmegges, Cloues, and ſuch like, be greatly commended in this Moneth.

Februarie.

And in the Moneth of Februarie, vſe to eate confections, ſanded with honny, for that they purge the body. And to eate Apples

Apples in this Moneth, is then commended, but to eate often freſhe Beefe, or other meates that be moyſt, or to eate anye potte hearbes, except the Parcely or Smallach, is then thought hurtefull. And rather eate ofter ſodden meate than roſted in this Moneth, for that the ſame dothe then kepe the body ſeluble. Alſo to bath in this Moneth is not hurtfull, nor to take a potion, or to bleede in that veyne vnder the thombe. And you maye ſafely take pilles in thys Moneth, to purge the head, for that a man feeleth hymſelfe more greeued wyth a beauineſſe in the head in thys Moneth, than in any other Moneth.

And to eate honny wyth breade in this Moneth is commended, for that the ſame dothe both purge the breaſt, and bladder.

March.

And in the Moneth of March, vſe to eate pleaſaunt and well ſpiced meates, and ſharp meates refrayne in this Moneth: but to drynke pleaſaunte and the ſtrongeſt Wyne is then commended. And eate often the Leeke pottage: and to bath often in that Moneth is greately commended. But beware of takyng any potion to purge or bleede by veyne in thys Moneth. And vſe to eate often of the herb Pennyroyall, for that the ſame doth heate the ſtomacke, and cauſeth then the better diſgeſtion. And in your ſalets alſo eate often the herbe Betonie, for that the ſame doth cleare and helpe the ſight, and muche amendeth the head. Alſo Graynes, Ginger, Nutmegges, Galingale, Pepper, and ſuche like ſpices, be profitable to drinke in this Moneth.

Aprill.

And in the Moneth of Aprill doth bloud encreaſe, wherefore to eate pleaſaunt meates and the riuer fiſhe, and ſalets often, is then commended. And to bleede then by veyne in any part of the body, except ẏ veyne of ẏ lungs, is then thought profitable,

for by opening ẏ veine then, is dangerous, but to open then the midle veine is greatlye commended, and to bath often in thys moneth: And to purge then the stomacke with a potion or otherwise is very good, but eat no kinde of rootes in that month. And to eate all kinde of fleshe, except the pigs, is thoughte good in this moneth. And you may then enter into Phisicke for anye griefe of the bodye (but drinke moderately) and you maye also safely blede for the scabbes in that moneth. And vse to eate the Bettony and Mintes prepared in hony, and drinke first in the morning without eating of anye thing, and to drinke also the herbe grace in wine, is then profitable. But beware of eatyng any kinde of salte fishe in that moneth, for that the same doeth then engender both the itche and scabbe on the bodye.

Maye.

And in the moneth of Maye, wash often thy face with faire running water. But vse not to eate of such meats that be hote of qualitie. And bléede in any part of the body, where néede shal be, but most profitable to bléede in the féete, for that the bloude then hath his course downe to the féete. And beware also of eating any stale fishe, or tainted flesh that soare smelleth. And eat your meales then in a dewe season, and dinke but little wine in that moneth . And to bathe in anye condition in that month is not vnprofitable . And to drink clarifyed whay simply, or drawen with cold herbes, is then very healthful vnto hote stomacks. And the pure wine also mixed with goats milke, and with that to annoint both the heade and breaste, is then greatly commended. And to drinke sharpe drinkes in this moneth, is thought good, and to take Phisike, if néede requireth. But eate no head nor foote of any beast in that month, bycause of the moysture of the herbes and grasse which the beasts do eate in that moneth. And to drinke wormwood wine is thought verie profitable in that month, & to eat Fennel rootes tenderly sodden. And to take gentle Lares to purge the bloud and body, is then thought good, and to sléepe after dinner in that moneth.

And

And yet some thinke, that to bleede on the heade veine, or liuer veine, is profitable in that moneth.

Iune.

And in the moneth of June, abstaine from suche meates as doe engender fleugme: and drinke then of the pleasauntest Wine, and drinke sometimes in the morning fasting, a cup of White wine, for that the same doeth then purge the choller in man. And to eate sallets of Letture, prepared with vinegre, is then thoughte profitable, for that they be good againste the humours whiche doe discende vnto the kidneis. And vse to eate then suche meates, as be light of digestion, and arise alwayes (all that moneth through) from the table somewhat hungrie. And arise then timely in the morning, and exercise your bodye with some long walke. And any may safely bleed that needeth, in ỹ moneth. But beware of eating milke, vnlesse the same bee well sodden, and likewise take heede both of the eating of cheese and apples in that moneth. And a man maye bath himselfe in that moneth, so that he tarry not long therein. And to wash the feete often in colde water, is then commended.

Iuly.

And in ỹ moneth of July, it is not good to eate strong meats, nor those whiche doe greatly nourish, or pleasant spiced meates, for the hotnesse then of the season, for that the Dogge dates be entred in that moneth. And therefore beware of bleeding by vaine, or of taking any medicine to purge the bodie: and yet may a man bleede a little by cupping in the bathe. And in this moneth and in the other moneth following, a man may drinke but little wine, for that the same doeth then drie the stomacke and liuer, and encreaseth choller. And there the smallest and weakest drinkes are then to be vsed fasting againste choller. And in this moneth refraine youre selfe from the venereall act, as nigh as you can. And vse to eate euerye morning fasting, a

little Sage and hearbe Grace, with a bitte of breade. And be ware of eating any muddie fish in that moneth (taken with the net) least throughe the eating of them, you catche then some sickncsse, and die thereof. And vse to eate then Uerjuice in all youre meates, for that the same doth cole and refreshe the bodie: but refraine the eating of fruites in that moneth. And very helthful it is vnto the bodie, to annoint the necke and breast with the iuyce of the hearbe Grace, Isope, and Smallach, mixed with Hony, and enter into a bathe fasting, yet bathe but moderately all the moneth through, for that otherwise to bath is daungerous in this moneth. And beware of eating either Bëtes, or Lettuce in this moneth, for that they haue then a kinde of poyson in them, whiche of this be righte perillous. And yet profitable it is vnto Husbandmen, to eate then bothe Garlike and Sage and fat Bacon.

August.

And in the moneth of August, doeth choller with melancholy encrase, so that of this do happen the Agues both colde and burning, and other grieuous sicknesses hardly cured. Wherefore a man must then refraine the venerial act, and order himselfe, in a moderate condition, as sleeping but little in the day time all that moneth, and to beware then of taking any colde, or to bleede by veine, or to vomit, or otherwise to take any medicine to pourge the bodye. And to refraine from eating anye potherbes all that moneth throughe. And refraine from eating anye Cabbages, for that they engender melancholy, and cause the Ague in men. And vse to eate Sage in all youre meate, for that the same is then profitable vnto the bodye, and with Melons the lyke, yet lesser in quantitie at your meales. And drinke then both good and pleasaunt Wine, and eate both pullets and veale, for that they then comforte the bodie. And vse to eate often Cinamon in your meats. And thys oyntment thus prepared, doeth helpe manye diseases of the body, as to take Pentroyal, hearbe Grace, Fenell, Smallache, the seedes

of

of Isope, Bay berreies, and Alpme, vnto whiche adde Oyle olíue, tempering al togither with hony, & after annointing the body therewith. And to eate also Lettuce, and all other thinges that be colde of qualitie, is then commended.

September.

And in the moneth of September, eate all maner of meates you liste, for that in the same moneth all thinges be in their proper vertue. And for somuch as the Haruest is well entred, therefore it is then good to take a gentle purgation, like as is the floure of Cassia new drawne, that gently purgeth the body, and comforteth nature, wherefore this likewise ought to be done, to the ende to preserue the body in health vnto the nexte Spring, & also to vse cordiall pouders in your drathes, vnto the Spring. Also in this moneth may simples be wel applyed in any sickneste, for that the rootes, the fruites and sædes do then abounde, and be also thorough ripe. And what that coulde not aptly be ministred in the moneth of May with simples, may in this moneth be done with them. And to eate Pomegranates, and Goates milke, is well commended in this moneth, for that they both encreale bloud, and cause a good colour.

October.

And in the moneth of October doe oure bodies ware drie, and the braine moiste, and greater bones, and therefore it behoueth to eate rosted meats often in that moneth, and to drinke pleasant wine. Also drinke new wines, and eate pleasant meat often, Goates milke fasting in that moneth, for that the same doeth then purifie the bloude and clense the Lungs. And eate often apple tartes prepared with comfortable Spices and Sugar, in that they comforte greatly the stomacke: but washe not the head in this Moneth. And let bloud in this Moneth, or gyue a potion to pourge, lyke as the necessitye of the sickenesse or disease shall so requyre. And beware of eating to muche of newe fruites: and the eating of the Radishe roote is then profitable, and to eate Mustarde also with all meates is then commended. Also all wilde

foule s

foules eaten then, be thought good, and Cloues with Cinamō, be profitable in that moneth.

Nouember.

And in the moneth of Nouember, is melancholy encreased, and bloude then decreaseth, and of this it is profitable to eate both egges and hony, and to vomite also sundrie times, the salt poudred meats is then commended. And bathe not in this moneth, or but little if nede so requireth, for that it is thoughte to be the moste perillous moneth of the yeare for to bathe in. And besides, the bloud is then restrained within the arteries of the bodie, which by sweating in the hote bathe, shoulde so cause the stirring vp of humors, and a stilling from the head, with vncurable paines of the head, and the darkenesse of sight, and paines otherwise of the eies. And in this moneth you may (if nede so require) either purge the bodie, or bléede by veine. Also the eating then of Honny, Ginger, Mulse, and Goates milke, is profitable to the bodie, for that they encrease bloud, and cause a good coloure to man. And the Cinamon and Ginger drunke often in this moneth is greatlye commended, for that they giue health. And in this moneth go not timely forth, bicause of the stinking mistes and fogges whiche then be, that greatly harme the head, and therfore let the Sunne be of some height, before youre going forth of the doores.

December.

And in the moneth of December doth melancholy & fleume encrease, which be both heauy and colde. And therefore a man muste then kéepe the body and head verie well from colde, and to eate suche things as be of a hote qualitie. Also to eate then potage made of Coleworts, and Cabages, and to eate rosted Onions prepared in Sallets, and either rosted apples or pears after meales, be greatly commended. And eate then the fleshe of Wethers, Rammes, and Goates, also Capons and al maner

of

of land foules, but no water foules. And bléde but a little in this moneth, and that in the heade veine, for that in no moneth of the yeare man hath lesse store of blonde than in this. And go not forth of thy house in the nighte time, excepte you be otherwise constrained, for that the moiste ayre of the nighte doeth much harme the bodie. And eate then Parcely rotes tenderly sodden, for that they muche comforte the stomacke; and eate Rape rotes also rosted vnder the embers (all that moneth throughe) for the health of the bodie. And eate not in this moneth neither of Cowes nor Swines flesh, for that they be then ouer-moiste, and of this vnprofitable vnto the bodie. And drinke often Wine in this moneth, and meats dressed with hony. And Cinamon, Mace, Nutmegs, Ginger, Graines, Cloues, Galingale, and such like often drunke or eaten in this moneth, do cherishe the blonde, the hearte and all the bodie.

¶ Of the falling sicke in any of the weeke daies, out of that auntient Phisition Hypocrates. Cap. vj.

AND now if any first falleth sicke on the Sunday, and amendeth not of that sickneſſe at the fift day after, he doth die in the ninth day following. But if he recouer and come to better health aboute the eight or ninth day after, then doeth he recouer perfecte health about the fiftenth day following.

And if anye firſte falleth ſicke on the Mondaye, then he ſhall recouer health at the ninth day following, but if that ſickneſſe continue vnto the twelfth day, the patient ſhall then die in the fourtenth day after.

And if any ſhal fall ſicke on the Tuiſday, he ſhal then amend at the thirde daye after, but if the ſickneſſe yet continueth, then death to be loked for without doubt, at the firſt or eight day after.

And if any firſt falleth ſicke on the Wedneſday, and that at the ſeauenth day falleth to good reſte and ſléepeth, they ſhall amende of that ſickneſſe, but if the ſickneſſe endureth vnto the xij.

day, and encreasing vnto the sixte or seauenth day, he dyeth then without doubt.

And if any sickle falleth sick on the Thursday, then he amendeth at the ninth day following, but if the sickenesse longer continue, yet amendment vnto health at the fiftenth daye following.

And if any beginneth to fall sicke on the Friday, he shall after amend at the seauenth or eight day following, but if that sickenesse longer endureth, the death to be feared at the fiftenth day after. And if that sickenesse shall somewhat abate at the eight or ninth day after, then the patient shal recouer to health at the sixtenth daye following.

And if any falleth sicke on the Saterday, and that the same sickenesse doth continue vnto the sixth day, then the person dyeth at the eight day following, but if that person cōmeth to health at the seauenth day after, and slæpeth quietly that night without paine of ỹ sickenesse, he shal after recouer perfecte health, at the fourtenth day following. And further note, that all men in health haue theyr vrine or water, in the morning white, before dinner againe redde, after dinner clearer and whiter, and at the euening before supper hote.

¶ Of those manifest signes whiche declare raine to follow. Cap. vij.

AND sirste a rednesse of the ayre aboute the Sunne being newe rysen, doeth declare a token of raine to ensue.

And a like rednesse of the ayre aboute the Sunne at the euening, doth forshewe fayre weather the nexte daye following. And when about the Sunne, after he is risen, or beginneth to set, shall appeare blacke or grēne cloudes, or blacke cloudes mixed with a grēnesse, and a circle, at that time the like apearing about ỹ Sun, or else shal ascend vō blacke or grēn clouds or appearing neare vnto a grēnesse, or else, that the Sun shal haue large clouds both aboue & beneath him, doth declare raine and foule weather to ensue, either in the same daye or night following. As the like notes in the rising of the Sunne, that then

raine

raine the same day, and the like at the euening, that then raine to ensue in that night following.

And the Sunne appearing hollow or spottie, or else arising or setting vnder a cloude, doth declare raine to followe.

And when the Sunne ariseth or setteth bigger than customably it is seene, doth declare raine to followe.

And the Sunne appering lesser in the arising than customably, or at the setting sheweth it selfe diuided into a blackishe cloude, and that neere to the earth, doth declare raine to follow shortely after.

And when a blacke, long and thicke cloude shall appeare aboue the Sunne, at the setting in the west, it doth declare raine to ensue.

And a misse aboue the Sunne, when the same doth long tarry, or not quickly spent, doth declare raine to follow, in that the same is caused throughe the dearwie and raynie vapoures, caried betweene the Sunne and our sight.

And when the Sunne after his rising, sheweth thorough a thicke cloude broken open, and shoting out beames darkely, or else the Sunne appearing diuided, doeth declare raine to followe.

And the Sunne appearing the greater parte of the daye thorough thin cloudes, or a mistie ayre the most parte of the daye, so that the Sunne sheweth throughe it, like to a round boule, doth declare raine to follow. And when the Sunne after the arising or the setting, especially in the Spring and Harueste giueth forthe mightie heate, in a mistie ayre, doth either declare wind or raine to ensue.

And when a thicke and blacke cloude appeareth aboue the Sunne, in the rising, and that by and by after the Sunne is hid vnder that cloude, then doeth it declare raine to ensue. But if the Sunne be not hid of that cloude, then followeth fayre weather.

And the ouer timely rising and appearing of the Sunne aboue the earth, doth declare raine to ensue.

And when in the third night after the chaunge of the Moone,

the hornes appeare blunter and bigger than customably, do thē declare raine to followe in that moneth.

And the Mone hauing blacke spots in the tops of hir horns, doth then signifie showers in hir firste weeks, and if such spots at the full of the Mone appeare in the middle, then doeth the same declare fayre weather to ensue.

And if the thirde night after the Mones chaunge, the South winde bloweth, then in the fourth day following it shall either raine more or lesse.

And if the Mone be not seene before the fourth nighte, and that the South winde then bloweth, doeth then declare raine to followe most part of that moneth. And the Mone in hir first appearing, shewing blacker of body than customably, and hauing blacker hornes, doth declare foule and rainie weather before the ende of that moneth.

And the Mones beames at the blowing then of the South winde, shewing darker, bigger, and shorter downward toward the earth, doe declare raine to follow.

And this is a great token of raine to followe, when as the Sunne in the daye time, and the Mone in the night, do appeare pale, or blackishe of coloure.

And when the night is faire and cleare, and the Element appearing fuller of stars than customably, doth thē declare raine to followe shortly after.

And another note of raine to ensue, is when fewer stars appeare in the night than customably, for that oure sighte then is hindered through the vapoures running in the ayre.

And the appearaunce of blacke cloudes in the ayre, and ascending of a miste or fogge vpwarde, in that the vapoures then be thickned togither, do declare raine to ensue.

And when the cloudes in the ayre be in a manner all of one colour rounde about, do then declare raine shortly after.

And cloudes appearing in the ayre like to flockes of woll, do sometimes signifie raine with colde, but no great raine, for that those flockes appearing, doe declare the grossenesse of the vapoures.

And

And white cloudes appearing in ỹ Sommer time, do declare hayle to ensue, but white cloudes appearing in the ayre in the winter time, do declare snow to follow.

And when a mist or thinne cloude doth happen in a drie season, and that the same ascendeth vpwarde, and is turned into a thicke cloude, doth then declare raine to ensue, but the same falling downewarde whiles the raine endureth, or shortelye vppon the rayne, doth then declare fayre weather to ensue.

And if manye white cloudes appeare neare the earth in the euening, for two or thre days togither in the winter time, they do then declare both colde and snow to ensue.

And the cloudes in the Winter time appearing whyter than customable, do declare snowe to followe, especially when after suche appearaunce, the ayre is then felt somewhat warme, throughe the heate whiche is then sente out of the cloude.

And the often chaunging of the Winde, which is especiallye knowen by the course of the cloudes, dothe declare raine to follow, in that the cloudes be driuen with the windes, and the vapoures also gathered togither, whiche through the thickning togither, doth cause the rayne to fall.

And the blowing of the South windes dothe declare vndoubtedly rayne to followe, in that these windes be hote and moyst, and thereof doe so easily resolue the vapoures from the bodyes aboue, whyche so cause the rayne to fall. Also a gentle Southwinde dothe euermore sende downe rayne, when as the same beginneth to ceasse, and ware still.

And the deawe not fallen in the accustomed season, and beginning then to fall, is a sure token of rayne to ensue, in that the deaw falleth not in the accustomed season, whiche perfitly declareth that the vapours which be in the matter of deaw, bee then carryed vp with others, and so thickned togither into a rayny cloude.

And when the Raynebow appeareth in the morning, before the middle of the daye in the West, and the like at after noone

toward the euening in the East, doth vndoubtedly declare long raine to followe.

And the Rainebow apearing in a faire day, doth declare rain to follow, but appearing after foule wether, doth declare faire weather to ensue.

And the rainbowe appearing in the South declareth muche raine to folow, and the rainbow appearing in the Weast, doth declare thunder and a small raine to folowe, and appearing about the euening in the East, doth promise faire weather.

And the greener the Rainebowe shall appeare, so muche the longer raine doth followe. But the redder the rainebowe appeareth, euen so muche the bigger doeth Wynde ensue.

And if the same appeareth in faire weather, then doth it declare both raine and winde to ensue.

And the like to a rainbow appearing either about the Moone, or about the light of a candle, doth declare raine to follow.

And two rainebowes appearing at one time, as the one hanging downewarde from the South, and the other Rainebow from the North, do declare raine to follow.

And when the cloudes and windes driue one waye, or into one quarter together, it doth then declare rain to follow without doubt.

And now these fewe Celestiall tokens here rehearsed, are both manifest and true, which any person of small knowledge, may lightly conceiue, and truely prognosticate vpon.

And further the earthly signes be these, as first, when that vapours breath out of the earth, as the like is manifestly felt, by entring into any deepe vault or cellour vnder the earth, being especially within a Citie or great towne, and that the pauie giueth forth a mightie stincke, that then raine doth shortly after follow.

And another note also of the earth, is, when timely in the morning before day light a myst ariseth, whiche sheweth lowe on the earth, and that the Moone then shyning, causeth the myste to shewe in forme of a Sea, and that after the Sunne is risen, the

same

same maketh the ayre very darke, and black cloudes also appering in the aire, which togither declareth a mightie rayne to follow, and long enduring.

And when the dust is more raised vp than customablye, and ỳ trees also much more moued in the groues and woods, it doth declare raine, without doubte, in that there is then a mightie breaking forth both of many and grosse vapours.

And when riuers and wels be shallower of water than customably, it then declareth raine to follow, in that the same matter and water, falleth from the cloudes, and of thys when those impressions be diminished, the be those moystures drawn vp, which so engendereth the raine.

And the drinesse of handes, and the clefts and roughnesse of the lippes do declare raine to follow, in that the attractiue vertue of the moysture is then both mightie and strong, whych so drieth the bodie, & maketh the lips rough. And of this the earthly bodies be altred according to the altering of the celestial bodies aboue.

And when small birdes in the beginning of winter, do gather and flie many in a company togither, seeking theyr meate in suche companyes in the fielde, it after declareth great colde and frostes to ensue, and stormie weather.

And all birdes, when they make a great noyse in the flying, then customably, and by trimming their feathers with theyr bils, do declare raine to follow.

And all riuer foules playing and beating themselues in the water, and washing themselues in that water, doe declare raine to ensue. And the like doe their riuer foules by leauing the water, and couetting the Medowe, signifie raine to followe.

And the Geese making a long noyse togither, and flying, doe signifie a tempest to ensue.

And the Bées seeking their hompe nearer home than customablye, doe declare a tempeste and raynie weather to ensue.

And when the shéepe toward the euening at their driuyng

vnto

vnto folde, do fæde more earnestly in their going, and take no care of the Shepheardes calling and crying vnto them, and that scarcely with strokes to be driuen forward, doe after signifye rayne to follow.

And the birde named the Pye, chattering more than customably, doth after declare rayne to ensue. And the Swine drawing forth, tearing & hiding handfuls of hay, doe declare rayne to follow.

And the Frogges making a greater noyse than customably, do declare rayne to ensue. And if the deaw appeare not in the morning, so that the same be not hindered through the wynde, after signifyeth rayne or frost to ensue, and this according vnto the time of the yeare.

And the Dren licking the houses of the hinder fæte, and against the heare, and lying all alike on the right side, doe declare rayne to follow.

And beginning to rayne, if the Dren fæde grædelyer, doe then declare the longer continuance of rayne. And the Dre beating with the fore fote, dothe eyther declare rayne, or tempest to follow.

And the Doues romming later vnto the doue house, than customably, dothe declare rayne to follow. And the sounde of belles or clockes heard further off than customably, doth declare rayne to follow, except the same be caused of winde.

¶ Of those manifest signes, which declare faire and dry weather to follow. Chap. viij.

Also firste, when eyther the Sunne ariseth, or setteth cleare, so that he be not couered of any Cloudes, doth then signifie fayre weather that day following. And if in the Sunnes rising, any circle appeareth aboute him of diuers coloures, or that it declineth vnto a fiery redneſſe, or that ꝑ Sunne beames passing through the cloudes, shall be redde and long (so that the beames seeme like shottes) and redde scattered without the circle, doth then promise mightie windes to follow.

And

And the Sunne setting red, declareth winde to followe, and if after the Sunnes setting in the Weast, red fierie clouds shal appeare, it declareth assuredly wind to follow.

And if the Sunne shew redde, or vnto an Orenge coloure before his setting, especially for a greate season before his setting, or in a manner throughout the whole daye, and that in the Weast he appeare of a great bignesse, it doth vndoubtedly signifie wind to follow.

And the Sunne arising hote, and not twinckling, declareth winde to followe: and if the Sunne in the rising appeare hollowe, declareth either wind or raine to follow: and if the Sun be felt hot many daies togither, doth after signifie drought, and winds long continuing.

And if the Sunne in the Winter time towarde his setting, shall shewe clearer and redder than customably, and that the North wind or some other cold winde shal then blowe, it doth signifie frost that night following.

And this declareth clearing of the weather in the time of raine, when as a brightenesse and clearing appeareth in the North parte, and that in the South parte appeareth swelled cloudes heaped togither.

And when after the Sunne setting, the Element appeareth blewe, and few starres appeare, and that the deawe be smal, it doth declare faire weather the daye following.

And if in the morning a misse appeare, whiche after the Sunne is risen, falleth downewarde, and ryseth not vpward anye more, to be séene of anye, it declareth a fayre daye following.

And when many white cloudes appeare, especiallye in the Weaste (nére vnto the earth) and in the euening, and this for two or thrée daies togither in the winter time, it declareth both cold and snow to ensue.

And a troubling of the aire vnto raine, and that the cloudes be then whiter than customably, declareth Snow to ensue, especially when after suche an appearaunce of the cloudes, the aire be felt somewhat hote, throughe the heate whiche is then

sent forth out of the cloudes.

And when the clouds driue one way, and the wind another, and right againste the going of the cloudes, doeth declare faire weather to follow. And the reason of this is, for that the wind bloweth contrarie vnto the going of the cloudes, which driueth them in suche sorte, that they cannot rayne downe.

And the Starres seene to runne or shote, declare winde to arise out of that quarter, and if they shote on euerye side, then they declare winde to followe out of all the quarters.

And if the Starres in the Winter time appeare brighter than customably, declareth a great cold to ensue. And the stars twinckling in the Winter, doth declare a great colde and big frost to followe.

And if the Starres be seene greater, both in lighte and bignesse than customably, doth then declare wind to follow.

And if the Battes do flie about timelier in the euening, and more of them than customable, doth then declare faire and hot weather, the nexte day following.

And if the Moone after the thirde daye of hir change, appeareth in the Weaste, with cleare and faire hornes, and hath no miste aboute hir, declareth faire weather to followe all that quarter.

And if the Moone appeare small and redde, and that also the same parte of the Moone, which then hath no light of the Sun, appeareth cleare, and with a certain driuing (as it seemeth vnto the eye) doeth declare winde to followe oute of that quarter from whiche the coloures come, and aboute the Moone departe.

And if there appeare one cleare circle about the Moone, whiche soone vanisheth away, doeth then declare raine to followe.

And where the Rainebowe appeareth but of two coloures, as red and yealow, and of no other coloures, declareth fayre weather to follow.

And lightning seene in the euening, withoute thunder and cloudes, and that often togither, and neare the earth, declareth a fayre day following.

And cloudes scene like vnto fleeces of woll scattered in the ayre, and the Sun be then of a good height, declareth faire weather to ensue.

And the Northwind strongly blowing, although it causeth many cloudes, doeth neuertheless cause faire weather to ensue for the more part.

And the noise of woddes, and muche mouing of the leaues, doth declare wind and a tempest to ensue.

And the Kytes playing and wauering aboute in the ayre, and that the one followeth the other in their flying, declare a hote and fayre day to follow.

And if little Flies somewhat before the Sunnes setting, do gather rounde on a heape before the Sunne, and playe vp and downe, declare a faire and hote season, the nert day following.

And if a white smoke be risen, before the rising of the Sun, and after the Sun setting, vpon the waters, marishes, & meadowes, doth signifie hote and faire weather, the nerte day following. And if the same appeareth in ẏ morning, thē faire weather ẏ day, & if at night, thē faire weather ẏ nert day following.

And the Hedgehogge where he lyeth maketh two holes, the one openyng towarde the North, and the other towarde the South, and whyche of them hee stoppeth, from the same parte the winde ariseth, and if both at once, then great store of wind to follow.

And the Crow timely calling in ẏ morning, declareth faire weather to followe, but crowing softely in the euening, declareth a tempest to ensue.

And the Crow calling hastily twice or thrice togither, declareth a tempest to follow.

And the Dogge wallowing on the earth, declareth a greate winde to followe, and lying on his righte side, doeth signifie a tempest to ensue.

And Oxen also lying on the righte side, declareth a tempeste to ensue.

But the Oxe lying on the left side, declareth fayre weather to followe.

And the Rauen standing gaping againſte the Sun, declareth a hote weather to enſue.

And the Rammes ſkipping oftner than cuſtomably, if they butte togither with their heads, declare a tempeſt to followe.

And manye long webbes (whiche ſome call the ſpittle of the Sunne) driuing in the ayre, declare winde, or a tempeſt to followe.

And the Rauen not chaunging his voice in faire weather, declareth the longer continuance of the ſame, as ſome auntient men write.

And a darkneſſe of the ayre after raine, declareth faire weather to enſue, (as moſt Authors write.)

And when many ſhotes of fire (drawing the taiſes after thē) appeare in the ayre, like vnto the ſhoting of the ſtarres, which be fierie vapoures, running and ſhining lyke vnto the lighte of the Starres, drawing after them a taile, doeth declare wind to followe.

And if ſuch vapours ſhote out of many quarters of the aire, they declare ſundrie winds to ariſe, and both thūder and lightning out of thoſe parts.

And the drineſſe of thinges by a ſuddayne maner in the Winter time, and no raynie weather, lyke as of Paper, the Marble ſtone, and ſuche like, declare froſte and colde weather to enſue.

And when Cranes flie in ſtraight order, and not bending, or turning again, it declareth faire weather to enſue, for that they flie not in ſuch order, before they ſée the weather cleare.

And the clouds alſo in the cleare aire, caried vpwarde, out of what quarter of the Element the ſame be, doeth ſignifie the winde to ariſe out of that quarter.

And if the cloudes heaped togither, by drawing neare the Sun, be ſcattered, and this cauſed from the North, declareth winde to enſue.

And Snowe falling in the beginning of Froſt, if the ſame fall verye ſmall, declareth the mightier colde to followe, but if the Snowe fall bigge, then a ſodaine thawe of the froſte to enſue.

enſue.

And the Haile falling in the Spring e Harueſt, declareth a faire ſeaſon, and ſomewhat warme the ſame day: and this according to the time of the yeare.

And if any dreameth to ſée byrdes, it declareth winde to followe the next day, as hath bin experienced.

And winds in the Winter blowe about the morning, but in the Sommer about the euening, and in the Winter out of the Eaſte, and alſo in the Sommer, out of the Weſt. And if the winde continue long North, and the Harueſt windie, declare a ſtill Winter: but if the Harueſt be ſtill, then a windie Winter.

¶ The Booke of the Arte or craft of Planting and Graffing.

¶ To graffe fruite that ſhall haue no core.

TAke a graffe and bow it bothe ends combing, and cutte both endes graffewiſe, and ſo faſten them into the ſtocke. And if it growe ſo with the trée, cutte away the greate end, and let the ſmaller end growe, and his fruite ſhal haue no core.

¶ To make Apples redde.

If you wil make Apples redde, take a graffe of an Apple trée, and graffe it in a ſtocke of Elme or Alder, and it ſhal beare red Apples. Alſo you may boze a hole in an Apple trée to the pith, and temper it with water of what colours you will, and then put it in the hole, and ſtoppe it with a pinne, and the Apple ſhall be of the ſame colour that you putte in the trée,

It is to be noted, that euerye trée that is planted on Saint

Lamberts daye in the earthe, shall not perishe, but prone and come to profit.

¶ To make the Peare tree beare much fruite.

If you will haue a Peare tree full of fruite, or else as much as it hath bin wonte to beare, temper Scamonie with water, and put it into a hole that is perced to the pith of the tree, and stoppe the hole with a pinne of that same tree, or of another, and it shall beare as it was wonte, and muche more plentifuller.

And if thou wilt haue them to smell like spices, or as muske or baulme, or other spices: make an hole in like sort in the tree, and stoppe it againe, and the fruite shall smell and sauour after the spices.

¶ To reuiue an old tree that is decayed.

If an old tree beginne to ware drye, do in this wise: quicken him againe, so that the eares that is about the rotes be done away, and cleaue two or three of the greatest rotes with an axe, and put a wedge into the cleuing, and couer the rote againe with the same earth.

Note also.

Perce the tree through with a percer crosse wise, or wyth a wimble, and the strength of the tree shall begin to ware yong.

¶ How to make a soure fruite tree bring forth sweete fruite.

If you will haue a fruit tree that is soure, to be made sweete fruite: delue the tree rounde aboute, and dung the rotes with Pigges dung, and so shall the fruit be made sweete. Also make an hole in the soure tree with a percer to the pith, and into the hole putte water tempered with honey, and stoppe the hole againe with a pinne of the same tree.

¶ The

¶ The ordering of an Almond tree, Walnut tree, Cherrie tree, and Peach tree.

Put the kernels of whiche of these you will in water foure dayes, and then put many kernels togither into the earth, or seuerallie, and when they spring and be growen out, and haue stand so a whole yeare, then take them out of the grounde, and set them then where you will: and it is to be noted, that of euerie tree the branches must be cutte in setting time, saue the Peach tree, which must haue his drie braunches cut only.

¶ How to nourish the Peach tree if it begin to wyther.

If the Peach tree beginne to wither, let him be well moystned at the rote with dregges of wine, and the same moystning shall keepe him from shedding of his fruite: and some say, that if the rotes be moystened with water of the decoction of Beanes, it shall quicken the tree greately, and if he cast hys fruite ere they be ripe, make holes with a wimble in the rotes, and make pinnes of willow, and smite them fast in, and the fruite shall abide on fast ynough.

¶ How to water Plantes when they waxe dry.

It shall be good to water them when the time is drie, in the first yeare: Then when they haue putte forthe of newe cions, leaue no more growing but the cion whiche is the principall and fayrest, vpon euery stocke one: all the other cutte off hard by the stocke: and euer as there do grow small twigges about the stocke, ye shall (in the moneth of March and Aprill) cutte them all off hard by the stocke. And if you then sticke by euerie plant a prette wand, and so bind them with willow barke, brier, or osiers, it shall profit them much in their growth. Then after fiue or sixe yeares growth, when they be so bigge as your finger, or thereaboutes, ye maye then remoue anye of them, whereas ye will haue them grow and remayne.

¶ The

¶ The ordering of the Apple tree.

If an Apple trée beginne to rotte, or any of the Apples beginne to ware rustie, then the barke of him is sicke: then cutte it with a knife, let it be opened, and when the humour thereof is somewhat flowen ouer, sée that you dung him well, and stop diligently his wound with clay.

¶ The ordering of the Quince tree.

The Quince trée all the time that he is able to be translated, he woulde be moued euerye fourth yeare, and that shall make him beare great plentie of fruite afterward.

¶ The ordering of the Cherrie tree.

The Cherrie trée loueth cold ayre, and moyst grounde, but some Cherrie trées like well in hillye places. The best setting of Cherrie trées is in the moneth of Nouember, and if nede be, in the latter end of Ianuarie. And if the Cherrie trée rotte, in any wise make an hole with a percer vnder the roote, that the water that causeth the rotting, may haue issue out. It is supposed that this medicine is good for all maner of trées that beginne to rotte. Also it is good for all maner of trées, when a bough is cutte away, that the place that is cutte be couered with clay, or some other defensible playster, for the defence of the rayne, that it make not the trée to rot.

¶ At what time Prunes ought to be planted.

The planting of Prunes in olde and moystie places, is best in Februarie and March, and the stones must be sette a handbreadth in the earthe, and when they haue stande so a whole yeare, take vp the springs of them, & set thē déeper in the groūd, and the stones must lie in water thrée dayes ere they be sette.

¶ How

¶ How the Medler ſhould be planted.

The Medler will beare well if he be planted, but graffe him in a white thorne called an Hauthorne, and they will beare the more plenteouſly.

¶ The ſowing of Roſes in a Garden.

If you will haue any Roſes in your Garden, you muſt take the hard Pepins of the ſame Roſes that be full ripe, and ſowe them in the earth in Februarie or in March. And when they ſpring, temper thē with water, and after the ſpace of a yeare, you muſt tranſlate them, and depart them farther from other, in what other place you will.

¶ How to plant white Grapes.

If you will that a Vine beare white Grapes, and on the other ſide redde, prouide that a white vine and a redde be ſette neere togither. And when they be rooted measurably both lyke muche, of eyther pare awaye halfe endlong vppon the pith, and twine them togither, and bind them ſo, that eyther ſappe méete without diſioyning, and wrap it togither with a ſouple linnen cloth, and euery thirde daye moyſt it with water till it grow. And after that they be growne togither, thou muſt cut away the one roote, and the other may beare it: and that vine ſhall beare both redde Grapes and white, notwithſtanding the one roote be done away: and ſo thou mayſt doe with two Peare trées or two Apple trée branches.

¶ How to ſet Vine plantes two and two togither.

You ought to plant and ſet your Vines, in two and two togither, the one to haue a part of the old trée, and the other may be all of the laſt cyon: but when ye plant him with a parte of

the old tree, he shall commonly take rote sooner, than the newe eyon. You must weede them euery moneth, and lette not the earth be too close about their rotes at the firste, but nowe and then lose it with a spade as ye shall see a rayne past, for then they shall enlarge, and put forth better.

¶ To make Grapes grow on a Plum tree or Cherrie tree.

And if you will haue Grapes growe in a Plomtree or a Cherrie tree, set a vine vnder one of those two trees, which you will, and when the Vine beginneth to growe, bore the other tree through with a pearcer, according to the greatnesse of the vine: then drawe through the tree, and pare away the vpper end of the same vine, as farre as it shall be in the hole, and so suffer it to growe, and when both be ioyned together, cutte away the rote end of the Vine by the tree, and solde that place well of that cutting and drawing of the Vine through the hole, and the cutting away of the rote of the Vine, and that must bee done in March: and some men will say it must be done eare the knottes begin to burgin, that for the strayte drawing, the burgines be not hurt, and then mayst thou doe the same with diuers trees, and diuers frutes, and make one tree to beare diuers fruttes of sundry couloures. Also ye must see, that at the Vine be good earthe, and spred it selfe of many scurges, it is good to cutte that off with a knife, and if it lacke yet ouermuch, delue the stocke about, and fill the pit full of Grauell of a flood, medled with Ashes. And some men say, do into the pit a good quantitie of small stones, and that is good therefore.

¶ The best times to plant and graffe in.

It is to witte, that when the Mone is in Taurus, it is a good time to plante trees of Graynes and Pepins: and when she is in Cancer, Leo, or Libra, it is good working of trees that be newe sprung: and when the Mone is in Virgo, it is good time

time to sowe all manner of things. And from the middest of September, vnto the middest of December, is open time of planting, and right so from the middest of Januarie, to the middest of March, but yet in these times it is good to those when the Mone is. 5. 6. 7. 8. or 10. dayes before the full. And after the full Mone, when she is. 20. 22. 23. 24. or. 25. dayes olde, for this quarter of the Mone is most temperate.

Note also.

Euery planting is to dispose it so, that the Sunne beames may come to the rote or to the earth, from the houre of three vnto none, and be planted in the best maner. And the trées that be bearing and of greate heigt, that partie that stode toward the North, be sette againste the North winde, and the Northwest wind. For the height North wind, and the Northwest winde by kinde doth kill and drie too much the trées that be new set for their vnmeasurable greatenesse, the earth must be ordeyned so, that it be neyther too fatte nor grauellie, but proportionably.

¶ How to set all maner of Pepins, kernels, and graynes in the earth.

All maner of Pepins, kernels, and Graynes must be sette in the earthe, in depenesse of foure or fiue fingers broade, that each be from other halfe a foote. Alwayes keeping this speciall rule, that the ende or grayne of the Pepin that stands nerte the rote be Northeast in the setting, and that other ende vpwarde towarde Heauen. And that you mopst them twice or thrice in the day, not rotting, but deawing or sprinckling: this is a prinitie among cunning men, that in the spring is most conuenable time for séedes, graynes, and Pepins, and Autume for springs and plantes.

¶ Of the maner and changing of the fruite of the Pepin tree.

Whensoeuer ye doe replant, or change youre Pepin trées from place to place in so remouing often the stocke, the fruite thereof shall also change: but the fruite whiche dothe come of grafting, doth alwayes kéepe the forme and nature of the trée whereof he is taken: for, as often I haue sayd, so often as the Pepin trées be remoued to a better ground, the fruite thereof shall be so much amended.

¶ How you may make an Orcharde in fewe yeares.

Some do take yong straight slippes, which do growe from the rotes, or of the sides of the Apple trées, about Michaelmasse, and doe so plante and sette them (with Oates) in good ground, where as they shall not be remoued, and so grafte (being well rooted) thereon. Other some doe take and sette them in the Spring tyme (after Christmasse) in like wise, and doe grafte thereon when they be well rooted: and both wayes doe spring well. And this manner of way is counted to haue an Orcharde the soonest. But these trées will not endure past twentie or thirtie yeares.

¶ How you ought to set the Pine tree.

For to sette the Pyne trée, ye must set or plante them of nuttes in Marche, or aboute the shewte of the sappe, not lightlie after: ye must also sette them where they maye not be remoued after, in holes well digged and well dunged, not to be transplanted or remoued agayne, for very hardly they will shewe forth cions being remoued, specially if ye hurte the mayster roote thereof.

¶ To

¶ To set Damsons or Plum trees.

In setting Damsons or Plum trées, which fruit yée would haue like to the trées they come of, if the saide trées be not graft before, yée shall take onely the Cions that growe from the rote of the olde stocke, whiche groweth with small twigs, and plant or set them: and their fruite shall be like vnto the trées they were taken off.

Howe to remoue a Settling.

When you will take a Settling that springeth out of an other trée rote, make and delue thereabout after the quantitie thereof, and so deepe till you come to the greate rote that the spring groweth out of, and thou maiste cut it off, and holding the edge of the knife towarde the trée grounde, and cutte it so with slope draught, and leaue as muche of the earth about the rote and stocke of the setting, as you maye, and set it in a good grounde ordained therefore, and in a conuenient time, as it is before saide, and if any spring so groweth oute of anye trée, chose that which groweth right out, that is not ouer long, but euen, without any small braunches, holding the knife in the cutting alway toward the trée.

How to remoue a great tree.

And if you wil remoue a trée that is great or bearing fruit, chose the full Mone, from the middest of October, to the middest of December, hauing vp the rotes as whole as you may, leauing as much of his owne earth about the rote, as yée may, wyth the same manner, and other as ye do with setting of smal trées, and setting, it forceth not thoughe the Mone be not euen in the full, so she be in the seconde or thirde quarter: the gouernayle of these plants, is doubling of bearing of fruite.

Howe to keepe late set plantes.

Also, if you wil kéepe late sette plants, kéepe them from euening raines, and from winds, namely in Harueste: for it is no

ſgreat difficultie in the Spring againſte the comming of Winter, ſette or ſticke aboute the ſetling many boughes, that the Northern winde, or greatneſſe of other windes, deſtroy it not, putte dung mingled with ſtraw about the ſtocke towarde the rote, of a good thickneſſe, that froſte and ſnowe congeale not on the rote: and make a deepe valley aboute the rote, the ſpace of fiue or ſeuen foote, that the water abide not and freeſe about the rote in Haruеſt, that is betwene Sommer and Winter, that when Winter commeth, it may be filled with dung, and ſo let it ſtande all the Winter, and in the Spring, putte vnder the dung newe earth: and cutte awaye all the vnprofitable braunches, and make it cleane aboute the ſtocke, and the rotes from wormes, ſcurfs, and moſſes, and from euill weedes going aboute the braunches, all the cloſe of thine Orchard wholy beſet about with other highe trees that beare no fruite, that the floures might be kepte ſafe from windes. And beware that no fruite be gathered off any tree before the time, for that is a right great and priuie harming to the tree.

How you may keepe Cherries good a yeare.

If you would keepe Cherries good a yeare, ye ſhal cutte off the ſtalkes, and then laye them in a well leaded potte, and fill the ſaide pot therewith, then putte vnto them of good thinne honny, and fill the ſaide potte therewyth, then ſtoppe it wyth clay that no ayre enter in, then ſet it in ſome faire Cellour, and putte ſande vnder, and all all aboute it, and couer the potte withall, ſo let it ſtande or remaine: thus ye maye keepe them a yeare, as freſhe as though they came from the tree, and after this ſorte, ye may keepe Peares or other fruite.

How you may ſet Cheſnuts.

The Cheſnut tree men do vſe to plant like vnto the Figge tree. They may be both planted and grafted wel, they wax wel in freſhe and fatte earth, for in ſand they like not: if ye wil ſet the kernels, ye ſhall lay them in water, vntill they doe ſinke, and

& these that do sincke to the bottome of the water, be best to set, which ye shal set in the moneths of Nouēber & Decēber, four fingers deepe, a foot one frō an other, for when they be in those two moneths set or planted, they shall endure long, and beare also good fruite, yet some there be that plant or set them firste in dung like Beans, which wil be swéter than the other sort, but those whiche be sette in the two moneths aforesaide, shall firste beare their fruite: men may proue whiche is beste, experience doth teach. This is another way to proue and knowe which Chesnuts be best to plant or set, that is, ye shall take a quantitie of Nuttes, then laye them in sande, the space of thirtie dayes, then take and wash them in water fayre and cleane, and throwe them into water againe, and those that do sinke to the bottome, are good to plant or set, & the other that swim, are nought: thus maye ye do with all other kernels or nuttes.

The order how to plant or set trees at large.

This ought to be considered of all Graffers and Planters, ỳ ye must giue a competent space from one trée vnto another, when as ye make the holes to sette them in, not too nighe, nor that one trée touche so another. For a good trée planted or sette well at large, it profiteth oftentimes more of fruite, than three or foure trées sette too nigh togither. The moste greatest and largest trées commonly are Walnuttes and Chesnuttes, if ye plant them seuerally in ranckes, as they do commonly growe vpon high wayes, beside hedges in fieldes, they must be sette fiue and thirtie foote asunder one from another, or therabouts, but if ye wil plant many rancks in one place togither, ye must set them the space of .xlv. foote one frō another or therabouts, and so farre ye must set your rancks one from an other. For the Peare trées, and Apple trées, & other sortes of trées, whiche may be set of this largenesse one from the other, if ye doe plant only in rankes by hedges, in the fields, or otherwise, it shall be sufficient of .xx. foot one from another. But if you will set two rankes vpon the sides of your alleys in Gardens, whiche be of x. or .xij. foote broade, it shall then be beste to giue them more

space

ſpace the one from the other in eche ranke, as about fiue and twentie fote: alſo ye muſt not ſet your trées right one againſt the other, but entermedling or betwéene euery ſpace, as they may beſte growe at large, that if néede be, ye maye plant of other ſmaller trées betwene, but ſée that ye ſette them not too thicke. If you liſt to ſet or plant all your trées of one bigneſſe, as of young trées like rods, being Peare trées, or Apple trées, they muſte be ſette a good ſpace one from an other, as of fiue and twentie or thirtie fote in ſquare, as to ſay from one ranke to an other. For to plant or ſet of ſmaller trées, or Pluin trées, Apple trées of the like bigneſſe, it ſhall be ſufficient for them fourtéene or fiftéene fote ſpace in quarters. But if you wyll plant or ſette two rankes in your Alleys in Gardens, you muſt deuiſe for to proportion it after the largeneſſe of youre ſayde Alleys. For to plant or ſet eagre or ſowre Cherrie trées, thys ſpace ſhall be ſufficient inough the one from the other, that is, of tenne or twelue fote, and therfore, if you make greate or large Alleys in your Garden, as of tenne fote wyde, or thereaboutes, they ſhall come well to paſſe, and ſhall be ſufficient to plant your trées of nine or ten fote ſpace: and for the other leſſer ſortes of trées, as of Quince trées, Nutte trées, and ſuche lyke, whiche be not commonlye planted, but in one ranke together.

The beſt way to clenſe and proyne, or dreſſe the rootes of trees.

And for the better clenſing and proyning trées beneath, doe thus: ye ſhall take away al the wéeds and graſſe about the rootes, then ſhal ye digge them ſo round about, as you woulde ſéeme to plucke them vp, and ſhall make them halfe bare, then ſhall ye enlarge the earth about the rootes, & where as ye ſhall ſée them growe fayre and long, place or couche them in ỹ ſaid hole and earth again: then ſhall ye put the cut ende of the trée, where he is graft, ſomewhat more lower than his rootes were, whereby his Cions ſo graft, ſhall ſpring ſo muche the better.

The

The maner of Graffing.

The great ſtock muſt be choſen in good ground, and it muſt be ſmoth and euen, and cut it without the Earth ỹ length of a foote or more, if it be as great as the thumbe, if it be greater, loke ỹ the cutting be euen ouerthwart the ſtock, and aſlope, and it muſt be clouen aboue in the middeſt of ỹ pith, the length of two fingers breedth, and in the clift ſet the graffe, which muſt be choſen of the beſt trée. The ſtocke is of the chiefe graffe that ſtandeth righte vpwarde, that hath a knotte of the forne yeare. And an ynche beneath the ſayde knot cut thy graffe, & twhitte it on both ſides, euen in a manner of a wedge, as far as it ſhall goe into the clift of the ſtocke, it muſt be ſo euen twhitten, that the ayze may not come betwéene the clift and the graft, & then cloſe it with good temperate earth about the graffe, for defence of raine and weather,

¶ How to graffe diuerſe fruites of one ſtocke.

If thou wilt graffe diuerſe fruites vpon one ſtock, that hath as many braunches, as thou wilte haue graffes on, in euerye braunche ſet a graffe in manner and forme as it is ſayde before, and euermoze chooſe the graffe on the Sunnye ſide of the trée that beareth it, and next the top if you may, and then mayſt thou graffe diuerſe fruites in one clifte, but none of them may be thicker than other, as your reaſon will tell you in the working.

¶ The way to graffe all ſortes of trees.

And firſt of al it is to be noted, that al ſortes of frank trées, as alſo wilde trées of nature, may be graft with graffes, and in the ſcutchin, and both do wel take, but ſpecially thoſe trées which be of like nature: therfore it is better ſo to graffe, howbeit, they maye wel growe and take of other ſortes of Trées,

but certaine trées be not so good, nor will prosper so wel in the ende.

¶ How to graffe Apple trees, Quince trees, Peare trees, and Medler trees.

They graffe the Peare graffe on other Peare stockes, and Apple stocks, crab or wilding stocks: the Quince and Medler, vpon the white thorne: but most commonlye they vse to graffe one Apple vpon another, and both Peares and Quinces they graffe on Hawthorne and crab stocke. Another kinde of fruite called in French Saulsay, they vsed to graffe on the Willowe stocke, the manner thereof is harde to doe, whiche I haue not séene, therefore I will let it passe at this present.

How to choose your trees for graffes.

When the trées wheras you intende to gather your graffes be small and yong, as of fiue or sixe yeares growth, doe not off the highest graffe therof, nor the greatest, except it be of a smal tree of two or three yeares, the which commonly hath too much of toppe or wood, otherwise not, for you shall but marre your graffing,

How you may keepe graffes a long time.

Ye may kepe graffes a long time good, as from alhallowtide (so that the leaues be fallen) vnto the time of graffing, if that they be well couered in the earth, halfe a foote déepe therein, and so that none of them do appeare without the earth.

After what manner ye ought to beginne to graffe.

Ye may wel begin to graffe (in leauing the stock) at Christmasse, or before, according to the coldnesse of the time, & principally the heatme or great Cherrie, Peares, Wardens, or forward

ward fruite of Apples, and for Medlers it is good to tarrie vn to the ende of Januarie and Februarie, vntil March, or vntil such time as ye shall see the trees beginne to budde or spring.

To haue fruite without cores.

To haue fruite without cores, loke ye haue a sufficiente graffe stocke, and therewith (I sayde before) chose a graffe of good Perle tree, and cut it on this manner, that the ende of the graffe that is vpwarde nerte the firmament, must be thwiten like the neather of a comming graffe, and the neather ende turned vpward. It is to be done warely. This rule is true in all trees that haue stones and kernels, but a Vine it behoueth to cut that is downeward nert the Earth, with great cunning and sleight.

How to trimme your Graffes.

Ye may graffe your graffes ful as long as two or three trichions or cutte graffes, whiche ye may likewise graffe withall very well, and be as good as those which do come of olde wood, and oftentimes better, as to graffe a bough, for often it so happeneth, a man shall finde of oylets or eyes harde by the olde slender wood, yet better it were to cut them off with the olde wood, and chose a better and a fayre place, at some other eye in the same graffe, and to make your incisiō there vnder, as afore sayde, and cut your graffes in making the incision on the one side narrow, and on the other side broad, as the inner side thin, and the outside thicke, because the outside (of your graffe) must ioyne within the cleft, with the sap or barke of the wilde stock, and it shall so be set in: see also that ye cut it smoth as youre clefts are in the stocke, in ioyning at euery place both euen & close, and especially the ioints or corners of the graffes on the head of the stocke, which must be wel and cleane pared before, and then set fast thereon.

How to graffe Vines on Cherrie trees.

If thou wilt haue a vine grow on a Cherrie trée, and haue the taste of Cherries, set a Vine by a Cherrie trée till it grow, and in the beginning of Feuerell what time it be, make a hole through the Cherrie trée, in what place thou wilt, and as oft̃ as thou wilt, and drawe through the hole a branch of the vine, so that it fill the hole, and shaue away the olde barke of ẏ Vine, as much as shall be in the hole. And put it in so that the shauen place of the branch stoppe full the hole of the Cherrie trée, and then cut away the rotten ende of the Vine, and wrap it wel about with good Earth, and binde it well with a little cloth, and kéepe it well in all things in other graffings, but some men leaue the rote ende vncut a yeare, till it be sowred with the Cherrie trée, and then cut it awaye, and this is a good manner and a sure, and so it may be done with diuerse trées of diuerse fruites, and the Grape and the Vine shal haue sauour of them: and so of euerie trée may be grafted in other, and it is a marueilous grafting.

To make a tree beare diuerse fruites.

If you will haue a trée beare diuerse fruites, and of diuerse coloures, and diuerse sauours, in the first yere graffe in diuers branches of a Cherrie trée, diuerse Apples to thy liking, and cleaue some of the branches vngrafted, the second yeare make holes through the Cherrie trée, and drawe through that hoale Vine branches, the vtter ende shauen of, as is before sayd, and in the same manner through another hole red Rose, and therwith (as before sayde) of the vine: and this diuersitie ye maye vse after your own liking.

FINIS.